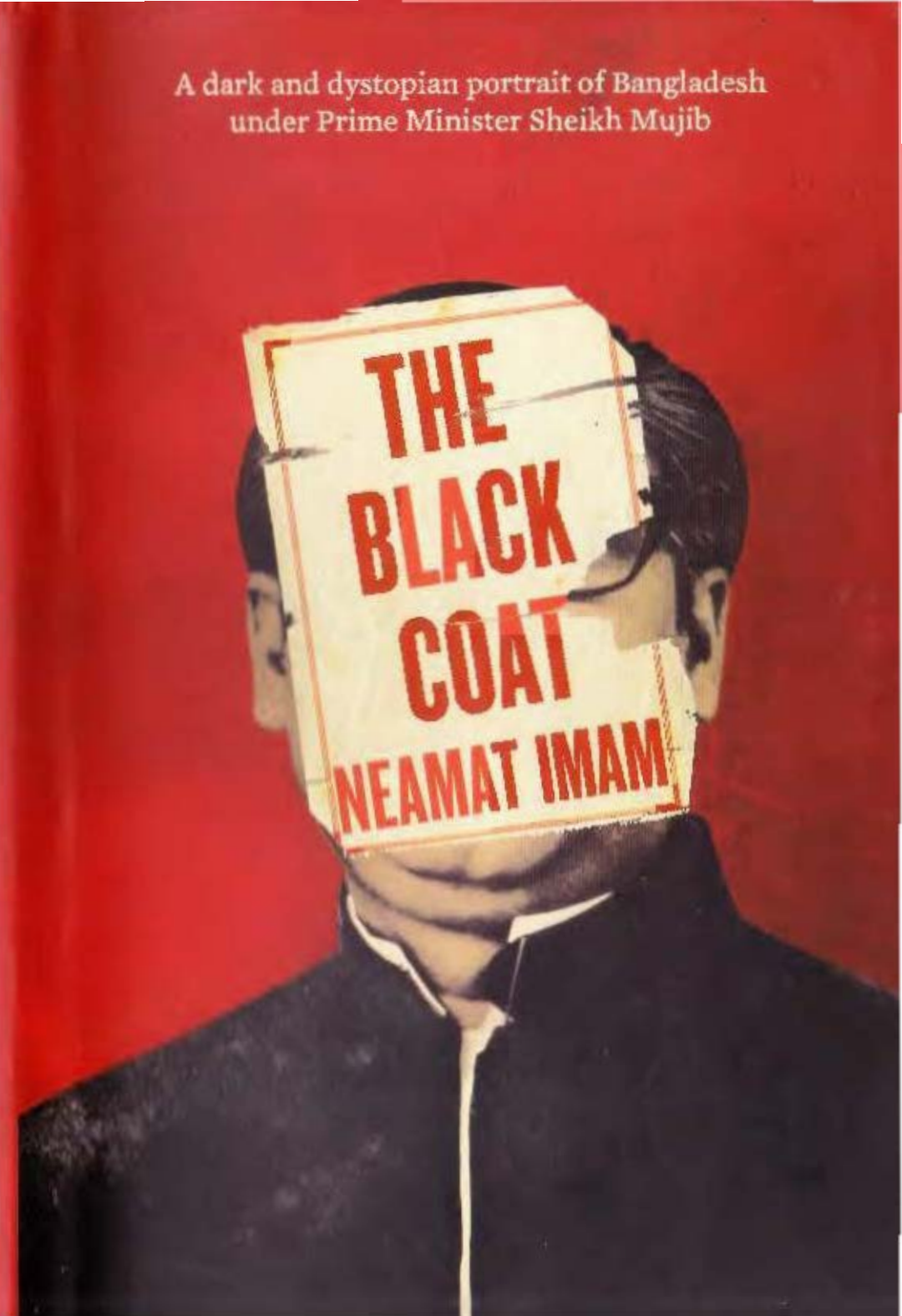
A dark and dystopian portrait of Bangladesh
under Prime Minister Sheikh Mujib



www.pathagar.com

NEAMAT IMAM

THE BLACK COAT

HAMISH HAMILTON
an imprint of
PENGUIN BOOKS

www.pathagar.com

HAMISH HAMILTON
Published by the Penguin Group
Penguin Books India Pvt Ltd, 11 Community Centre, Panchsheel Park,
New Delhi 110 017, India
Penguin Group (USA) Inc., 375 Hudson Street, New York, New York 10014, USA
Penguin Group (Canada), 90 Eglinton Avenue East, Suite 700, Toronto,
Ontario, M4P 2Y3, Canada (a division of Pearson Penguin Canada Inc.)
Penguin Books Ltd, 80 Strand, London WC2R 0RL, England
Penguin Ireland, 25 St Stephen's Green, Dublin 2, Ireland (a division of Penguin Books Ltd)
Penguin Group (Australia), 707 Collins Street, Melbourne, Victoria 3008, Australia
(a division of Pearson Australia Group Pty Ltd)
Penguin Group (NZ), 67 Apollo Drive, Rosedale, Auckland 0632,
New Zealand (a division of Pearson New Zealand Ltd)
Penguin Books (South Africa) (Pty) Ltd, Block D, Rosebank Office Park, 181 Jan Smuts Avenue, Parktown North, Johannesburg 2193, South Africa

Penguin Books Ltd, Registered Offices: 80 Strand, London WC2R 0RL, England

First published in India in Hamish Hamilton by Penguin Books India 2013

Copyright © Neamat Imam 2013

All rights reserved

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

This is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places and incidents are either the product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously and any resemblance to any actual person, living or dead, events or locales is entirely coincidental.

ISBN 9780670086658

For sale in the Indian Subcontinent only

Typeset in Adobe Caslon Pro by SÜRYA, New Delhi
Printed at Thomson Press India Ltd, New Delhi

This book is sold subject to the condition that it shall not, by way of trade or otherwise, be lent, resold, hired out, or otherwise circulated without the publisher's prior written consent in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published and without a similar condition including this condition being imposed on the subsequent purchaser and without limiting the rights under copyright reserved above, no part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in or introduced into a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means (electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise), without the prior written permission of both the copyright owner and the above-mentioned publisher of this book.

ALWAYS LEARNING PEARSON

www.pathagar.com

Contents

Prologue 1

BOOK ONE

1. At the Front, Not at the Front 5
2. Assessing the Ash 9
3. Nur Hussain 14
4. An Embarrassment and a Dream 19
5. A New Picture 23
6. My Valued Companion 26
7. He Begins to Speak 31
8. The Speech 35
9. At the Barber's 38
10. The Coat 42
11. The Specs, the Pipe and Some Necessary Advice 46
12. Counting Coins 50
13. A Story for the Press 55
14. Meeting Moina Mia 60
15. My Rage and My Frustration 65
16. Danger at the Door 68
17. An Enormous Campaign Begins 73
18. Dinner with Shah Abdul Karim 77
19. A Guest in the House 83

www.pathagar.com

20. You Give Me Good Money, I Give You Good Publicity 86
21. The Newcomers 89
22. A Coat for All 92
23. My First Coat 96
24. In Anticipation of the Meeting 101
25. In the Company of the Prime Minister 104
26. A Transformation 109

BOOK TWO

1. The Dishonourable Demise of Two Burglars 115
2. Sold 120
3. An Excuse for Killing 124
4. You, Not I 128
5. A Thought in the Dark 131
6. The Gloom in the Face 136
7. At the Crossroads 140
8. Today for Tomorrow 144
9. A Long Talk, a Win 148
10. The Sweet Taste of the Unknown 151
11. The Eyes of God 154
12. The Screw Eater 158
13. My Fear 162
14. Nur Hussain Puts on Rags 167
15. The Frightening Me 171
16. His Monster Speech 174
17. A Conversation and a Warning 178
18. A Reaction, an Overreaction 180
19. An Impossible Option 184

www.pathagar.com

20. The Return of Shah Abdul Karim 186
21. Their Obscene Talk 191
22. A Punishment for Me 196
23. Imprisonment Begins Here 201
24. The Dream Returns 206
25. The Girl, the Woman and the Old Man 211
26. Tears in the Eyes 218
27. The Madness 222
28. An Insult for a Thousand Years 225
29. Goodbye to Moina Mia 229
30. Thirty-five Years of Darkness 233
Epilogue 238

www.pathagar.com

www.pathagar.com

In the happiness of his subjects lies the king's happiness, in their welfare his welfare. He shall not consider as good only that which pleases him but treat as beneficial to him whatever pleases his subjects.

—Kautilya, *Arthashastra*,
(fourth century BCE)

www.pathagar.com

www.pathagar.com

Prologue

Wednesday, 17 March. Hundreds and thousands of my countrymen are on the road today. They are marching towards the city's central public square where the Awami League—Sheikh Mujib's party—has organized a massive open-air ceremony for his birth anniversary. The Awami League government, which has declared him Father of the Bengali Nation, has deployed an extravagant number of security personnel to maintain order. They are guarding local street corners, nearby highway intersections and strategically important rooftops, and stopping vehicles to look for dangerous goods. Hundreds of party workers are assisting them; they are carrying rods, pipes, batons and bamboo sticks, and are regularly applying them to anyone who appears to be unruly and suspicious. Dozens of loudspeakers mounted on electricity poles are announcing the arrival of national leaders and intellectuals, as well as acclaimed singers and musicians who will perform after the speeches.

As I sit at the Shaheed Minar stairs and look at the posters, festoons and banners I think back on a different time. I hear a distinctively trenchant voice: 'You have betrayed us! You have betrayed us!' It was thirty-five years ago. He was a part of my soul—a brilliant man, an immaculate heart.

~

www.pathagar.com

www.pathagar.com

BOOK ONE

www.pathagar.com

www.pathagar.com

1

At the Front, Not at the Front

In 1971 I was a staff writer with the *Freedom Fighter*. It was a weekly paper published in the old part of the city of Dhaka during the Bangladesh liberation war. It printed reports of the progress of the *Muktibahini*—Freedom Fighters—against Pakistani military assaults. A broadsheet of only four pages, it quickly became a hit with readers because of its inspiring writing. Lutfuzzaman Babul, its editor and publisher, said it was regularly being smuggled into Bengali refugee camps in various Indian territories, where the Muktibahini received guerrilla training before moving to the front. He said members of the Bangladesh government in exile who were based in India read every word of it. In the absence of Sheikh Mujib, leader of the liberation struggle, who was imprisoned in West Pakistan for treason, it was considered one of the most important nationalist voices in the country

I believed him. I believed in the vision of the paper. That's why, although it was published by a small media company with limited and irregular income, I decided to stick with it. Sometimes I wanted to take a rifle and go to the front. But Lutfuzzaman Babul said I was already at the front; reporting during such a primitive war was not an easy task, it was a fight in itself. He was sure the *Freedom Fighter* would accomplish more than what killing a bunch of Pakistani soldiers would; it would redefine the entire ruling class of Pakistan by rousing their conscience against genocide. He told me to write with passion, to fill my columns with love for our people, so that every Bangladeshi upon reading my words would be imbued with an enormous sense of patriotism.

In all my articles, I attacked and insulted the Pakistani rulers—present and past. I ridiculed them, invented stories about them, misspelt their names and designations to make them seem eccentric

www.pathagar.com

and trivial. They were cockroaches. Tikka Khan, the army commander in East Pakistan, should be massaged with fourteen spices and marinated for three nights before being roasted for hungry dogs on Pakistan's national day. We published Pakistan's flag with a Nazi swastika logo instead of the traditional crescent and star; superimposed mammoth, bloody, terrorizing horns on Pakistan's President Yahya Khan's head. In emotionally charged language, I narrated how Pakistanis had jumped upon us like beasts with sharp claws and teeth and would not give up until they had sucked the last drop of our blood and turned our country into a wasteland.

In article after article I wrote against those who collaborated with Pakistan and smuggled out valuable security intelligence. 'Hang Them Twice', I titled one of my articles, which argued these traitors should be hanged along with our enemies because of their misdeeds, and then hanged again for betraying us while being a part of us. Bangladesh would never forgive them, I said; they were not sons of our motherland, they were aliens, Bedouins, Jews, agents of the CIA. They were the damned, awaiting severe punishment for their actions in the people's court. When the country would be free, we would find them; we would find all those zombies even if they hid under the rubble, in the bed of the silent seas, above the clouds, and in the shadow of Iqbal, and hang them one by one in public squares. Traitors! We would dance in their blood.

I specifically criticized the poet Iqbal because Pakistanis regarded him as their wisest man. They called him Allama, the Scholar. He dreamt of a unified homeland for all Muslims in the subcontinent, thus opposing the concept of the separation of Bangladesh from Pakistan. By talking about an integrated Pakistan, he only wanted to immortalize Bangladesh as West Pakistan's peaceful colony. I said that, although I knew even Gandhi had sung his song *Saare jahan se achchha—Better than the entire world*—to express his love for the subcontinent. Iqbal died long before the British rule came to an end; nonetheless, I attacked him as if he were alive today, alive and well and advising Pakistan's generals on homeland integration affairs, sitting in some fortified palace inside the Karachi cantonment. Because he was their precious poet, we needed to bully him, the way they bullied our precious leader Sheikh Mujib.

www.pathagar.com

In September 1971, Lutfuzzaman Babul called a meeting in his office. We—all eleven reporters, proofreaders and administrators—gathered around his table. From four thousand copies in April, the circulation of the paper had grown to twelve thousand in six months; four pages had become eight. He told us there would be no scarcity of investment to take the paper to the next level once the country was liberated. By the next level he meant to give it an institutional shape, to make it a real business venture so that all its employees had a permanent job in the new country. It would not be surprising if Sheikh Mujib's government wanted to acquire it for its communication department. In that case, we would all automatically be turned into public servants. We loved our country and becoming public servants was the best thing that could happen to us. He advised us to redouble our efforts in inspiring our people to kill Pakistani forces wherever they were found. Kill, kill, kill—that was the message; kill them; eat them alive.

We published a victory issue of the paper following Pakistan's surrender on 16 December 1971, ending the nine-month war. Including supplements, it was sixteen pages. We printed patriotic poems and stories, pictures of children running down the street waving flags, female students of Dhaka University singing 'Our country has plenty of grains and riches'; noted intellectuals contributed essays on the themes of nationalism and the Bengali psyche, the evolution of the Bengali cultural tradition, and the history of the Bengali renaissance in the twentieth century; a professor analysed ideas of rebellion in our folk literature.

But the main attraction was the picture of a smiling Sheikh Mujib, wearing a heap of garlands around his neck. The article that followed praised him for his determination, conscientiousness and towering social influence. He was one leader who ardently stated he did not want to be the prime minister of Pakistan, and instead wanted to see Bangladesh free. We printed details of his political career along with several pages of pictures.

Sheikh Mujib was more popular with Bangladeshis than Mohammad the prophet; he was supported by people of all religions and creeds. On 10 January 1972, he returned to Dhaka to form a government, after being released from Pakistani custody. 'There is

www.pathagar.com

not another leader like him in the world,' people said. 'There won't be another leader like him in the future.' A new cabinet was sworn in immediately. Military and border security forces, police and other institutions were created and organized as quickly and adequately as possible. Mass graves were discovered in different parts of the country. The buried were exhumed and reburied. Roads were cleansed. Walls were washed to make room for new graffiti. Pakistani tanks, weapon carriers, personnel carriers, ambulances, helicopters and supply trucks—burnt out, blood-spattered and broken—were removed from the streets. Offices and marketplaces hoisted new flags. Educational institutes and courts opened. Government documents published in Urdu, the language of Pakistan, and Urdu–Bengali dictionaries were gathered together and set ablaze in the national park. Muktibahini members returned from the front, wept for deceased fellow fighters, got married, and joined in victory parades in every city, town and village. The smell of loss gradually began to fade.

Sheikh Mujib delivered a special message to the *Freedom Fighter* shortly after he came to power. He was such a busy person; the whole country was waiting for his directions; Russian president Brezhnev was waiting to meet him; British foreign secretary Sir Alec Douglas-Home was waiting. But he made time to take pen in hand to write a few lines on his newly printed letterhead in his most direct language. 'My brothers,' he wrote, 'the enemy is gone. It is your country now. Forget your differences. Transform your hate into action. Build this nation. *Joy Bangla*.'

The message was recognition of our hard work, Lutfuzzaman Babul said. It was an inspiration for us as well as for every man and woman in the country. Now that the country was free, he did not speak about the *Freedom Fighter* becoming the government's mouthpiece. I knew him; I had no doubt he believed a paper must be free even in a free country—particularly in a free country.

www.pathagar.com

2

Assessing the Ash

It was now time to take a good look at the country, to record the scope of the devastation. It was time to find the ones who were still alive and to mourn for those who were lost forever. Those who were wounded or injured needed care. Those who had lost everything needed help to heal their pain. There were the stressed, the psychologically traumatized and the homeless, who needed a moment of calm. But above all, and despite all this, we needed to celebrate the heroism of our people.

I went from district to district, village to village, to understand how individuals had coped with the horrors of the war and how they now felt about living in a liberated country. I spoke with hundreds of people who were displaced during the war, who had lived in slums for months, but now expected something better. I submitted my reports with statistics and pictures; they were duly printed.

Sometimes it happened that I spent hour upon hour speaking with freedom fighters who had gone to the front. I wanted to know what had motivated them so elementally that they had not feared for their lives. It was an old question, but I asked it every time as if it were new. Every person faced that question in his own way, in his own time, and every person must have his own answer. I wanted to know what their answers were.

They all believed in the leadership of Sheikh Mujib. All of them believed that if the country were not free now, under his direction, it would never be free. Some said they did not go to war for the country; they went for him. They did not know what they were doing; he said they must go and they did. One old man, whom I met on a ferry on the Buriganga, gave me an absolute answer. 'If he calls upon you, you can't just say no, or say you're afraid to die,' he said. 'It is impossible. Are you an animal? Is there no shame in you? You say:

www.pathagar.com

I'm here and I'm ready. You say: I am grateful that I lived in Bangladesh and I lived during the time of war. You thank Sheikh Mujib for seeking your help.' He asked me if I had gone to the front. I had not, I said, suddenly unprepared. His sharp, penetrating eyes filled with overwhelming contempt. 'I don't speak to you,' he said, as he slowly moved to the other end of the ferry, holding firmly to his underarm crutches. 'Whoever you are, you're not a Bengali; you're not Sheikh Mujib's man. I don't speak to you.'

Some of them gave me beaten rice and cups of milk to recover my energy; some invited me to join them for a lunch of pumpkin curry and roti. During these meals, I tired them with my relentless curiosity, and they baffled me with the details of their narratives. They wanted to speak, most of them, and while speaking, they got excited, as if they were still at the front, still in the war with 303s on their shoulders, and crossing mountains and submerged rice fields.

In Mymensingh, I met a middle-aged gentleman who introduced himself simply as the Commander. He had an excellent sense of geography. He drew a small map in the yard with a stick and gave me a visual description of where they had fought, where they had faced the most horrendous resistance, and where they had swum a raging river on a stormy night to rescue their fallen comrades. He told me he had heard the voice of Sheikh Mujib in the fall of the waves and in the sound of the thunder; that helped him overcome his fear during the battle.

It was obviously an exaggeration. I looked at the Commander. He was a strong man with short hair, a cobra tattoo on his back, and a clean-shaven face with heavily aromatic aftershave—quite the opposite to the sort of bearded village elder with a copy of the Koran clutched to his chest who might believe in superstition. I left the yard, confused and lost, and stood on the path facing the open south. One of the Commander's disciples followed me there. He knew I did not believe him, he said; but it did not matter now because the war was over. He said he also heard Mujib's voice several times during the war. 'You may not believe me either,' he said, 'but you may believe in God. At this moment I can only tell you that if you believe in God you must believe in Sheikh Mujib.'

www.pathagar.com

In early 1973, I was assigned to visit Gangasagar in Akhaura to write a piece on Mostafa Kamal. He was a martyr of the war. When he and his fellow fighters came under heavy attack from the Pakistani air force, he decided to give his men the opportunity to escape. Pakistani soldiers shot him and then bayoneted him to death.

Raihan Talukder, whose brother Wahab Talukder was also killed in the Gangasagar assault, offered me a bed for the night in his hut. Having an eight-hour return journey before me, I decided to accept his hospitality. He took me around the village, introduced me to his neighbours respectfully. 'Khaleque Biswas, eminent journalist from Dhaka,' he told people, 'and very close to Sheikh Mujib.' I did not know what prompted him to introduce me like that; probably he thought everyone interested in history and politics and living in the capital was close to Sheikh Mujib. I remained silent. If the invisible presence of the prime minister made my life easier in a remote village, who was I to complain? In the evening, I worked on my report by the light of a hurricane lamp. Raihan Talukder went to sleep in the inner room, but he got up every few minutes to enquire if I needed another glass of water or perhaps a cup of tea, if the hurricane lamp had enough kerosene and finally, if he should tell me the stories of Gangasagar once again to make sure I had all the necessary information for my assignment.

I asked him if he was aware that the Bangladesh Army was preparing to decorate Mostafa Kamal with the title *Bir Sreshtha*. 'Are they?' he said. I asked him if he knew what that title meant. He looked at me with wonder.

'Mostafa Kamal is one of the seven great heroes of our liberation,' I explained. '*Bir Sreshtha* is the army's highest recognition of bravery.' Still it did not seem to make much sense to him.

'There are more than seven great heroes in the Gangasagar area alone,' he said. 'What about those who died with him? Did they die any less than he?'

I realized it would not be easy to make a philosophical point about death and heroism to him. Telling him that there were levels of valour, and there were many kinds of good deaths, even if all of them happened in the same place, at the same moment, triggered by the same hazard, would end in futility, because he had already accepted

www.pathagar.com

death as the Great Leveller. The simple solution was to ask him if he thought there were differences between him and Sheikh Mujib, though both of them loved our country. There were, he said immediately, lots. 'What kind of a question is that?' I knew that would be his only response. 'Sheikh Mujib is not an average human being like us,' I said; 'he is special, superior and incomparable. The same way, there is something special about Mostafa Kamal that separates him from other martyrs.' Raihan Talukder accepted my point thoughtfully.

After he had left, I put out the hurricane lamp and tried to visualize the very moment when Mostafa Kamal decided to take charge of the situation. I wanted to enter his heart. I wanted to be a blood cell in his veins and see what his eyes saw in that enormous chaos. I wanted to experience how a simple moment—a moment in a small village and of horror and ferocity—defined a whole life and made everything else insignificant. I wanted to imagine I was he, a non-commissioned soldier, and I was telling my mates that I was their protector, their most dependable and dynamic guardian angel; I could bargain with death and successfully deny or postpone or defy it for them. Then I wanted to see how my end crept up on me, inch by inch, following my own decision: a decision that he had taken for me; a decision that I had taken for him.

I woke up early and silently, dreamily walked to the spot where he was killed. It must have been the place—a valley between prehistoric mountains—which had influenced him to take his decision, an influence he could not ignore. I walked around with my shoes soaked in the dew, and filled my chest with cold, translucent air. I walked from side to side, corner to corner, stepping on my footprints, looking around, looking for something I did not know existed but hoped would explain to me the very heart of the place. I found nothing. It was a place of nothing; it had been a place of nothing, for everyone, today and yesterday, and it would be a place of nothing for centuries. That was what I understood. I was not Mostafa Kamal, I thought, then, to satisfy myself, to cover up my truth. I did not have his eyes to see, his heart to feel, his moral stature to commit to serving the life force. Whatever I would see or feel would be mine, completely mine, not his. I felt a small vibration in my fingers, a mild

www.pathagar.com

increase in my heartbeat, and my footsteps became slower and more lethargic and finally stopped. That was mine, I knew. It was not vast, definitely not as immense and overwhelming as Mostafa Kamal's feeling, but it gave me something.

The sun came out, making the surroundings luscious and flamboyant. Raihan Talukder joined me. I asked him what time of day it was when Mostafa Kamal was killed—if it was a morning like this or a dark cloudy day or an evening retiring fast into night. He did not answer, as if it was no longer necessary to know what time of the day it was. Mostafa Kamal would have made the same decision no matter what. Raihan Talukder sat at the foot of a bamboo clump; I sat beside him and we looked at the field before us as if something were happening there: the past was unravelling, and Mostafa Kamal was advancing towards the very moment of his non-existence like an oyster creates a pearl, little by little.

Back in Dhaka, I examined the entire liberation war from Mostafa Kamal's perspective. I considered his final moment as a long moment that lasted nine months, the entire course of the war. I believed it could last longer, until eternity—if need be, until all the dictators in the world fell and all discrimination came to an end. Together Mostafa Kamal and his fellow fighters constructed one large moment of truth. Their eyes did not see, their nerves did not feel, their rational faculties did not function, but their human spirit worked without fail. By engaging with that moment, they knew they were serving the most valuable and inevitable cause in human history: the cause of freedom.

I posted a copy of the article to Raihan Talukder. I was grateful to him for his hospitality and friendship, I wrote in a note. The first-hand information he had provided was absolutely invaluable. If he ever came to Dhaka, even for a day, he must see me; it would be a pleasure to buy him a cup of tea.

Life moved on. I did not hear back from him immediately, and I did not bother to send him another letter, because I had new stories to focus on, new assignments to complete. Until one morning a young man appeared at my door and gave me a letter.

www.pathagar.com

3

Nur Hussain

Raihan Talukder had received my message, the letter said, and everything was well in Gangasagar. Strangers came there almost every week looking for their lost ones. They walked around the place where the battle had taken place, sat in the tea stalls, asked villagers about the dead, if they were of a certain skin colour, age, body shape and height, if they had left anything behind: letters, shoes, clothes, combs, specs, handkerchiefs, wallets and rings. They gathered at the graveyard, prayed for the unidentified valiant fighters, and then left with tears in their eyes. Some of them came again and again; they brought fish heads, cow shank soup, sweet fried rice balls, green chillies, ripe palm fruits and scallions for the villagers, invited them to their houses, attempting to create a lasting bond with them. Sometimes journalists came; they came from different papers, radio and TV channels, sometimes from as far as the Indian city of Kolkata. They took pictures, interviewed villagers and bought goat's milk yogurt before leaving. It was encouraging to see that Gangasagar had drawn the attention of so many good people from across the region.

But the fame of the village had not made life any easier for its inhabitants. Raihan Talukder used the rest of the letter to introduce to me one Nur Hussain, bearer of the letter, who desperately needed employment. He described him as a 'loyal, patient, sociable and diligent young man' and believed that among all his acquaintances, only I was in a position to help him find suitable employment. In the last passage, he also gave some hints about what that suitable employment might be. Nur Hussain could serve in a responsible position in the government, he wrote. The nation-building process was painstaking and challenging; the government needed honest and dedicated people to work in its various departments; there would be

www.pathagar.com

many positions in the newly created ministries that he would be fit for. He would work with commitment and devotion; I would never have to regret helping him out.

I removed all the old newspapers from my storeroom and placed a single cot there for Nur Hussain. I gave him a mat, a bedsheet, a pillow and a pillowcase. In the village, people slept on hogla mats or mats of jute fibres or rough wooden floorboards. Their pillows were often greasy and stinky, and filled with cotton compressed by years of use and moisture. I had seen people use bricks or stones as pillows and straw blankets as quilts. In comparison, I made comfortable arrangements for him. There were mosquitoes, hundreds of them, but I never spoke about them. From my bed inside a net, I frequently heard him slapping them. 'He'll get used to them,' I said to myself as I closed my eyes. 'He'll have to. A person can accept anything and everything when he faces the question of survival.'

Dhaka was not an easy place to conquer. I told him this in our first serious conversation, a day after his arrival, when I thought he had recovered from his trip. Dhaka had too many things going on, too many people involved in too many things at the same time. But he shouldn't worry; the city had a strange capacity to accommodate anyone from any background. He too would settle in. At least he had a roof over his head, which many newcomers did not. He would eat with me, stay with me and, in due course, would have enough money of his own to rent a flat as big as mine, if not bigger.

Gradually, I learned that he had no transferable or marketable skills. Skills were the currency in the new labour market, where employers looked for more than knowledge and credentials. He could not speak standard Bengali, let alone English. He never browsed the newspapers that I brought home with me every day, not even the sports pages or the entertainment advertisements. He was just not interested. Raihan Talukder had said he was a fast learner. I did not understand what he meant by that. In the evening I made him tea and asked what level of schooling he had had. 'Please don't feel embarrassed by my asking this,' I said. 'I need to know exactly what you can do, so that I can find something that'll suit you.'

'Fifth class,' he said, then sat for some time with eyes cast downward, perhaps wondering if it was actually fifth class. 'That is

www.pathagar.com

great,' I said, quietly, though I felt uncomfortable. 'I know loads of people who have never been to school. But they are raising their families like everybody else.' Then I asked if he knew how to stitch clothes, lay bricks, and work with wood or iron; if he knew bicycle mechanics, welding, plumbing, digging, scaffolding, anything. He did not. All I understood was he could sleep all day and all night without ever asking for food. When I invited him to dinner, and he sat to eat, he ate silently and ate only what I put on his plate. He was shy, introvert, principally a useless human being in a city of four million human beings.

It was not easy to approach someone about a job for one who had lived all his life in his father's bamboo shed without caring to fix or learn or earn anything. He might be intelligent with goats, know their body language, grazing and foraging strategies, and reproductive cycles, but there were no goats in the city. Here, people had to deal with people—hard, solid, rubbish, despicable people with very low or no self-esteem. They must know how to give commands or how to live under constant commands without whining all the time. He gave me a serious headache. I had no idea how he would fit into the highly competitive and ambitious culture of city life.

Just to give him the impression that I was looking for a job for him, one day I told him we had an opening for a staff reporter position at the *Freedom Fighter*. The salary was good, the job was interesting, and, most importantly, he would meet many political and business leaders as part of his professional responsibility, which might open further career opportunities. If recruited, he would travel to remote corners of the country, to the hills and borders, to collect information, to investigate favouritism, conspiracies, poisonings, murders, mass killings, to report on various developmental activities, to interview people in a range of different circumstances for stories of human interest, to build reliable contacts to collect facts on developing incidents, and the paper would pay for all his expenses. Wouldn't he want to enjoy such an exclusive opportunity? It was an honourable job too, I said with emphasis, mimicking my editor Lutfuzzaman Babul, but immediately added it might not be ethical for me to recommend his name because he did not have a *proper* education and the technical knowledge for it. Writing a report is an art, I explained.

www.pathagar.com

One has to begin with a clear idea about the purpose of the report and end it with an equally clear point of view. Understanding the difference between the mundane and the significant points is one of the guiding factors. Besides, he was not well informed about what had happened to our country in the past few years, I said as if I had known him all my life. He had seen the assault on Gangasagar; after the war he might have also seen the evidence of atrocities committed by Pakistani soldiers in the surrounding twenty villages. But did the war begin in Gangasagar? No. Did it end there? Absolutely not. That meant many more causes and decisions were associated with it. Until he could explain them one by one, his knowledge of the war was limited and his analysis of it irrelevant and dangerous. In contrast, a journalist with the *Freedom Fighter* knew what the war was about. He knew its typology, its ambiguous complexity. He knew when a difficult time was approaching, raising its horns like an angry bull. He remembered at all times which minister said what, what Sheikh Mujib's six-point demands were, where they were written and declared, who the British attorney was who helped get him out of the Agartala conspiracy case, which song George Harrison sang at Madison Square Garden in New York in support of Bangladesh. I also pointed out that Nur Hussain was not aware of what was happening at the moment. He did not know for example who Dr Kamal was, even though Dr Kamal was engaged in writing a full, workable and acceptable constitution for the country.

It was not his fault, I finally said. He lived in the countryside, where people survived on agriculture, traditional neighbourly goodwill, religious values and ethics, happy to know only ordinary matters; rules of political engagements, statesmanship and diplomacy did not apply there. They did not watch TV, listen to hourly BBC broadcasts, read newspaper editorials or attend weekly discussion programmes at the national museum on aspects of our national life. I did not expect him to be well prepared for a profession he had never heard of.

Another day I said I had a friend who needed a locksmith. Not a prestigious job like being a newspaper reporter, probably the payment was meagre too, and the working hours odd and longer, but good enough to begin with. I asked him if he had seen those black electroplated 300 gm keyless pin-controlled locks hanging from the

www.pathagar.com

doors of banks. It was the technology of the future. Who would want to carry a set of rusty keys if they could do without them? He said he had never seen a bank and the only lock he had seen was the one used to protect their cow from thieves. That would be a small nineteenth-century solid padlock with an iron key made in India. The key must turn 180 degrees to undo the hook. Those locks were out of fashion now. Thieves knew too much about them.

I gave him a concise description of the steel-made Taiwanese locks that had three columns of digits from zero to nine with almost unlimited resettable combinations, perfect for home, business, garage, school or post office. From my cupboard, I brought out the one I had. 'How strong do you think it is?' I asked. 'You think you can unlock it with a piece of wire? There is no hole to slip a wire into it. There is no way you can tamper with it or damage it.' He gazed at it for at least thirty seconds. 'Hold it, here,' I said, and gave it to him. The country was developing fast, I told him as he played with the digits, and every locksmith must know how to operate new locks that provided maximum security and protection if they wanted to remain employed in the future.

www.pathagar.com

4

An Embarrassment and a Dream

His prospects looked grim. I did not know what to do. Telling him that I was busy, I spent two days without speaking to him. I kept a newspaper at the dining table and read it again and again while we ate. Then I went to my room and closed my door.

I could not ask him to leave. That would be too embarrassing, considering the fact that in my mind I always believed I was an immensely powerful person. But, most importantly, it would be a social crime. It would destroy my reputation with Raihan Talukder. He would think I had let him down. *You're an educated person*, he would say. *How could you do something like that? If you yourself were not enough, couldn't you talk to Sheikh Mujib?* Nur Hussain had to leave of his own accord. I could only make things so complicated and confusing for him that he would give up and say goodbye.

Today or tomorrow, he was going to accept that Gangasagar was not only an easier and better place for him to live in, but that it was also a gross mistake to leave it for Dhaka. Perhaps one day he would understand why I had failed him, and would be able to forgive me.

Two more weeks passed. He did not appear unhappy or distressed. Instead, I noticed, he had adjusted to the wild attacks of the mosquitoes and the untarnished solitude of the flat as if he was on a pilgrimage and would accept any hardship. The only change was that he was more silent now, more detached, and more occupied with himself. When it rained, he sat at the window the whole day, leaning against the wall. He coughed a few times as the humid air entered his nostrils and got slightly frightened when thunder struck nearby. Then, once again, that awful silence, with his eyes upon the rain. I gave him one of my woollen hand-knitted pullovers. He accepted it without a word, wore it over his T-shirt, crossed his hands, and looked at me

www.pathagar.com

with gratitude. Then, stretching his neck, he watched me as I tidied the living room, but never rose to help me, not even when I struggled to lift the sofa to clean underneath it. Probably he did not want to do anything that I might consider foolish, insane or disturbing—or he had noticed the sharp anger I had to hide day after day. I was angry not because of my failure to find him a job, but because he was there every moment to remind me of that failure. 'He has no right to embarrass me like this,' I kept on telling myself. 'Why on earth did Raihan Talukder send him to me? I would never have accepted his hospitality if I'd had the faintest idea this would happen.'

The only option I could think of was to engage him as my caretaker. I did not need a caretaker; in fact, I hated the concept of enslaving someone to secure my own comfort. That was obvious exploitation.

But he needed me. If enslaving him protected his existence, I should happily go for it. I decided that he would cook for me, sweep the house, wash my clothes, go to the grocer, and guard the door in my absence. If there was time, he would collect water from the market when tap water was unavailable. His compensation would be regular meals, clothes and lodging. I asked him if he wanted to do it, if he *really* wanted to do it. 'I won't be unhappy if you don't do anything for me,' I said. 'If you find it condescending, that is okay, I'll understand. Many people value dignity over comfort. I consider that a sign of character and strength. I just wanted to help.'

He nodded. He would like to begin right away, he said.

One or two evenings he chopped onions, washed the dishes and proved himself disqualified. He was absent-minded. He was not hygienic. He did not know how to peel potatoes or handle a knife safely while cutting through the spine of a three-inch freshwater fish.

Did I want to see blood on my floor?

Absolutely not.

On one of those nights, as I was lying on my cold, moonlit bed, tired from trying to think of someone who could employ Nur Hussain in a temporary but real job, I dreamt of sepoy Mostafa Kamal. I dreamt I was a young boy, younger than Nur Hussain, and I was in Gangasagar, just outside Raihan Talukder's house, and was watching him fight

www.pathagar.com

against the mighty Pakistani military. Hiding behind a high mound of earth, soaking in my sweat, trembling with fear and anger, I saw how fiercely he chased the enemy with his automatic machine-gun. The colour of the sky changed from white to grey, darkness fell in the surrounding rice fields, the wind brought rain, stars shone and sank in the morning lights, but the battle continued. It continued for seventeen hours, and for seventeen hours I observed him from my hiding place.

'I see you,' he said to me, between chases. 'Don't stay here, go away, go away; leave this place. Fighting is not fun; it favours nobody; it wants everything—your body, your mind, your heart. Go away right now. There are just too many of them; they are in the sky, in the water, in the land; they've taken hostage of the whole universe. Hear that noise, that striking, brutal, monster noise, ruthlessly echoing in ten directions? That is from a twin-barrelled self-loading mortar; soon the whole area will be covered with a dense white smoke spiralling to the sky. Through that smoke they will come like ravenous beasts, searching for prey and glory and meaning. But I will not give up; I will not let them steal dust or a drop of water or a small leaf from this land. They will not touch any of our flowers, our fish, our beautiful evenings, our songs and waterfalls. You stay away, go to a safer place, find yourself something to eat, sleep well; there will be fights for you too, many of them, after this fight. Fights never end.'

I stood up, shouting through the smoke. 'I can't leave you alone,' I said. 'I've to learn fighting; I've to learn it watching you. Let me stay here, please; let me know what blood is when it is warm, what hate is when it is good, what endurance is when it is indispensable.'

'You make me happy, kid; you make this war more inevitable and pleasing than it has been; you make this gun fire by itself. But staying here won't do you any good. This is my fight; it had become mine long before I was born, before my mother uttered her very first word. Let me win it or die. Here they come. Close your eyes.'

I stayed. I did not close my eyes. I saw the destruction. I saw the elation of the human devils as they stood before him, pointing their weapons at him.

After he was bayoneted, and the earth became red with blood and then black, the air smelt of sulphur, and the military left, laughing

www.pathagar.com

like hyenas, spitting in his face, feeding his balls to hungry crows, I took him in my arms, wept for several hours, and carried him to the nearest deserted *char* land, where I buried him in the sand. It was useless writing an epitaph on the grave. The sands do not remember for long. There are heavy dust storms, which irritate the ground, sweep away sea crabs and their skeletons, and fill every snake hole. Frequently tidal waves come. But I wrote his name. I wrote his name in letters twelve yards long, perhaps expecting someone from the sky to look after him.

It was not a complicated dream. Its suggestions were also not complicated. I believed that the war in 1971 had happened for me and for me alone. It happened to boost my spirit, to keep me rational, to make me responsible. And Mostafa Kamal died only for me. He became history so that I would know exactly how important it was to remain motivated. I believed it was my turn now: I must do for Nur Hussain what Mostafa Kamal had done for the country. I felt ashamed of myself for not looking for a job for him.

So I began.

www.pathagar.com

5

A New Picture

Too many people had moved to Dhaka after the war: those that were directly affected by the war; those that could not find any employment in their villages, like Nur Hussain; those that suddenly became ambitious because they were now citizens of a free country. The homeless made up the largest group among them. They came from all areas of the country, but mostly from the districts that had seen repeated natural disasters. Homes lost; entire crops damaged; cattle mad or dead; the only hope was the railway that ran between cities. They got on the trains, crowd upon crowd—children, the elderly, the newly married, widows, widowers—anyone who did not think life was limited to the confines of their village. In Dhaka, they slept on pavements, at railway stations, in hospital corridors and abandoned buildings. Every morning, they came out on the streets, begged from pedestrians, robbed them, squatted openly on the sewerage, and then slept in their inadequate and filthy clothes, only to prepare for next morning's struggle. Innumerable tent houses rose in different unclaimed city plots and public parks, next to newly built multi-storey office buildings, glitzy five-star hotels, dazzling mosques and temples. Smoke from their portable earthen kitchens blackened the Dhaka skies day and night.

Until then, I had been engaged in finding a superior meaning in the freedom that had come to us at the cost of thousands of lives. To be honest, I had engaged in theorizing about that which did not exist and which we had never known—stability. I saw people coming to Dhaka, but I did not know why Dhaka was the only solution for them. Now I saw what I did not want to see. I saw hunger, dissatisfaction, rampant poverty, looting. It was only eighteen months into Bangladesh's independence, and the country was falling into a deep pit of brutality.

www.pathagar.com

I went to a friend who sent me to another friend who sent me to yet another friend, looking for a job for Nur Hussain. I went to my distant relatives, to their relatives, their relatives and their relatives. I spoke passionately about him. He had already made a serious effort by coming to the capital from the remote countryside and dared to live with a stranger to better his luck; I thought he deserved my reference. He was a gentleman, I said. He was caring and never got involved in arguments of any kind with me. Anyone who hired him would be doing themselves a favour. It was not easy to find someone who would not steal from his master or suddenly disappear without trace. He would not do that.

Nobody took any notice. Those who did, did so negatively. 'Do not come with any such requests, please,' they said. 'We are worried we might lose our own people. We have no time for one who is already lost.' What has happened to these people: has freedom made them heartless and selfish? How can they be so apathetic? Every night I returned home and ate my supper with him in silence. Every night I looked at him less and less, and yawned more and more, to give the impression that I was terribly tired. I could not forget I was failing scandalously in a very simple matter. I was failing before someone as trivial as Nur Hussain, who knew nothing and understood nothing.

Perhaps he did. He began to chop onions regularly with me in the kitchen, trying his best to make every slice fine and equal. He washed his hands before and after touching food, swept his room every day, cleaned the kitchen and my bedroom, scrubbed the walls and the floor of the toilet, and dried his underwear in the privacy of his own room. He made the pile of newspapers tidy, arranged them according to date, and one day pointed out that I was wearing a soiled shirt, a shirt without two lower buttons, its collar damaged by sweat and salt.

I gave him money and he bought our groceries. At the end of the month, I gave him letters to post, bills to pay. He did everything as directed and returned home immediately. He walked fast—and I guess sometimes ran—through the sad, distracted, unmoving crowd to finish his work quickly. He had no interest in the city; he didn't care what went on there. His world was my flat with its uncomplicated compromise between space and furniture, and his contribution to my life became wider and stronger.

www.pathagar.com

I visited Lutfuzzaman Babul. After a brief introduction about the daily state of affairs, I told him I had thought about it a lot and every time I thought about it, I knew I had to do something. He looked at me with wonder.

'What do you mean? Haven't you been doing what you wanted to do? Don't you enjoy it any more?'

I told him I wanted to write something different.

'Different?'

'Something new,' I answered. 'Substantial.' My country was suffering. Good-for-nothing politicians were playing games with people. There was emptiness in people's stares. It was rapidly contaminating those that were still active and dreamt of a better life in the future.

I gave him a detailed account of my recent experience across the city.

'And what difference would that make?'

I did not know. 'Freedom is freedom when it surfaces as a lifestyle for people,' I said. 'The first step is to ensure food for everyone, then a place to sleep. At the end of the day, everyone must go home. Where is Sheikh Mujib? Where is the Awami League? Don't they see these people?'

Lutfuzzaman Babul remained silent, although he looked troubled. I understood that as an editor, he had to consider the circulation of the paper before implementing any major policy shift. His daily bread, along with that of the whole team, depended on it. Change would not come in a day. But I reminded him that the paper actually originated from a highly devoted political project and it had achieved its present position only because we had been persistently presenting the truth, irrespective of our political affiliation. We wanted our people to go public about the most burning public problem of our time: to be free or not to be free. Was daily bread everything? I asked. Didn't we call our paper the *Freedom Fighter*?

He stared at me for some time and then abruptly ended the meeting. Within a week, he made the decision to lay me off. 'Financial constraints,' he said.

I became like Nur Hussain.

www.pathagar.com

6

My Valued Companion

Not entirely like him. I had experience, he did not, I said to myself. I had a month's salary in my pocket and some savings that I had put aside over the last two years. I saved money by quitting smoking, by walking from place to place instead of hiring a rickshaw, by taking buses for long-distance trips instead of renting a taxi, by not inviting friends to my flat on social occasions. By contrast, Nur Hussain was penniless. I knew people; I had connections that could be of immense help. He had nobody. My friends had not done anything for him, but I was sure they would do something for me. At least they could make some phone calls to potential employers in their circles. They could spread the news: 'One hard-working, vibrant, dutiful, far-sighted and forward-looking journalist with an extraordinary writing portfolio, Khaleque Biswas, is now available for hire.' They would be happy to stand as referees for me. If they could not do that, what was friendship for? And I had ideas, I said to myself; finding a lucrative job would not be that difficult for me. By contrast, Nur Hussain was stuck; he would go nowhere; his life was created to be wasted. My accidental caretaker, then somebody else's professional caretaker, and then one day, after many seasons, an old man who couldn't even take care of himself. He would disappear as nature's unplanned production.

I stayed at home for a week coming up with a strategy. I must begin serious and well-organized networking with the specific purpose of landing a suitable job. There must be a crack somewhere in the industry. I must find it and enter through it. Then I would make my presence felt, using my energy, intelligence and perseverance. I would move so fast that that crack would soon turn into a tunnel leading to a golden gate. My colleagues would be astonished at my capacity.

I prepared my résumé, revised it several times to perfect its wording and to rectify all spelling errors, used bullet points to highlight my

www.pathagar.com

skills, clearly stated what I was going to bring with me to my new workplace—like leadership, management, investigative skills, and the ability to produce an extraordinary piece of writing within a short period of time. I then wrote customized cover letters for every appropriate position I could think of. The newspaper industry was expanding rapidly. It had drawn an obscene percentage of the new investment in the private sector. Money was pouring in from nowhere. Who could tell before the war we had so much money in our country? Who could tell that in a country with only a twenty per cent literacy rate people would love and respect the print media so much?

Soon, thanks to my good luck, I met two editors of daily papers and had a long, unhindered, stimulating conversation with them. They were two rising non-academic political thinkers of the country who kept themselves away from salacious trivia. I knew they were jealous of the extraordinary growth of the *Freedom Fighter*; I had the insider's information. Wouldn't they want to know what had made that growth possible and the secret to making that growth sustainable in the post-war period? I had my thoughts about a well-governed society, but I did not want to overwhelm them with my arguments and interpretations, especially in our first conversation. I wanted them to go home and think about me, look at my résumé when they were free, and then decide how I would add a new dimension to their papers. But I could not resist mentioning one point. I said the time of process journalism was over; it was important we offered readers news as it happened, so that people believed we were on their side. We could not hide anything. People had become conscious and they had proved it during the liberation war. Guns could not terrorize them. Tanks could not stop them from marching. Wave after wave of carefully fabricated propaganda could not break their determination. The only way for us to go forward was to respect our readers and countrymen.

One of the editors opened his cigarette pack and lit a cigarette, releasing a large spiral of smoke. The other walked to the kitchen and poured a glass of water for himself. I have been able to torture them, I thought. I have put them on the sword. They are now suffering. They will suffer until they have heard the rest of the story from me. My strategy was working.

www.pathagar.com

Everyone I spoke to in the press encouraged me. They understood my plan. Some of them who hesitated to support me before their superiors patted me on the back in private. 'Extraordinary,' they said; 'smart thinking. Go ahead. We're with you.' They would do anything to help me out. They were real people, I thought, people with brains and vision. They sensed danger before everyone else.

I was satisfied with my progress. I needed only one opportunity, and I had the unshakeable confidence that it was going to come from one of the papers. It was only a question of time.

At home I began to share more and more hours with Nur Hussain. He could not talk about anything other than Gangasagar and its seasons, its landscape and marketplace, animals and vegetation. But I accepted him with kindness. I spoke softly. We went to the market together to buy stuff. We ran in the school field together and went to the lake to swim.

'There is a famous song in Gangasagar,' he said one day. 'Everyone seems to like it there.'

'What is it?' I asked, seemingly curious. 'Can you sing a line?'

He sang the opening four lines of 'O My Gold Bengal, I Love You.' He did not even know that was our newly declared national anthem. I let him sing the lines twice and then said, calmly: 'Yes, that's a lovely song, a very lovely song indeed; no wonder people love it so much there.'

When he got to the story about the bamboo bridge that connected the village to the main road, and the fact that it broke down every year because of the huge current in the canal during the monsoon, I knew that that was the end of his stock. He always ended there. That bridge brought the whole country to the village, thus it had a symbolic significance, which did not escape his attention. Nostalgia choked his voice. He could speak no more.

In contrast, I could tell him stories of the whole war, chronologically dividing it month by month, analytically dissecting it incident by incident and area by area. In fact, I told him the story of the subcontinent beginning with 1757, when India fell to the British imperialists. The British had bribed Nawab Seraj Ud-Daulah's army chief, Mir Jafar, and with his help had captured and brutally killed

www.pathagar.com

the Nawab. I spoke about their barbarism, which had lasted almost two hundred years. They enslaved us to produce raw materials and then compelled us to buy their processed goods. I also narrated how they divided the subcontinent in 1947 on the eve of departure, and what happened in Pakistan in the two decades that followed. With reference to the general election of 1970, I told him how Pakistani dictators did not bother to democratize the country when the grand occasion came, and how they wanted to control us with might in our own home.

It was not clear how much of it he understood, but he respected the passion I put into my story. Since I did not go out every day, I told him the story of the war again and again, and he heard me again and again with the same reverence in his eyes.

My savings were dwindling fast. It was not my flatmate that I worried about now; I worried about myself. In particular, I worried about losing the flat, becoming one of the homeless, the utmost tragedy at this time. It would be too much to bear.

When I did not hear from any of my potential employers and no offer came from my friends and colleagues, I reflected on my conversation with the editors. I could not understand what had gone wrong. If they were future keepers of our democracy, they would have needed me. Then I read their papers. Their columns were boring. They created a surreal world with words and pictures. They filled page after page with garbage, as if they had willingly surrendered to the stifling control of the government instead of attacking it. I guess they considered me an enemy of the people. The person who goes against the government is not an enemy of the people. Those who accept their government's limitations in silence are the real enemies. I had never felt so disheartened.

The situation compelled me to go back in time, to refocus on Sheikh Mujib's speech delivered in Dhaka on 7 March 1971.

It was a historic speech—the seed of our independence. It had the unique power to motivate Bangladeshis from all walks of life to stand up for their right to self-determination. It kicked off the celebration of our Independence Day. The *Freedom Fighter* regularly published a quote from it in a box in the upper-right corner of the front page.

www.pathagar.com

This is the struggle for independence, it read; *this is the struggle for our freedom*. Now that we had achieved our nationhood, I wanted to understand what Sheikh Mujib had in mind for me as an individual citizen.

I played a part of the speech on my cassette player, listening to every sentence carefully. I played it in the morning and at night. I played it whenever I could not decide what else to do. I listened to it loudly, quietly, and spoke along with it so that the words could not cheat me and I felt them in my heart. Sometimes I carried the player in my hand, walked from my bedroom to the sitting room, where I sat for hours listening to it. I pressed the auto-reverse button. The speech ended and began again only to end and begin again.

Nur Hussain understood the trouble I was in. He had instincts, if not knowledge. 'You're a good person,' he said. 'Soon someone will understand you and offer you a place at the table.' Then he sat beside me silently, probably thinking he had said almost too much and put himself in trouble. He took small breaths. His hands and feet did not move. Then, after a few minutes, he turned his face to me and smiled to cheer me up. Though I was much older than him, and was supposed to take his responsibility on my own shoulders, day by day he was becoming my most valued companion.

www.pathagar.com

7

He Begins to Speak

One evening a few days later, after a long, purposeless walk across the neighbourhood, we took a break at the Shaheed Minar area and Nur Hussain suddenly began to speak from Sheikh Mujib's speech. His voice was artificial, but deep, loud and passionate. Sitting against the reddish daylight, he spoke slowly, uttering one or two words at a time, like many of our countrymen who attended political campaigns and were so carried away by some grandiose slogans that they repeated them in their sleep. He did it, I believe, to amuse me. It was a joke, as I could tell by looking at his smiling face. When I turned away from him, he stood up.

'What are you doing?' I asked out of irritation. 'Nur!'

It was clear he had no idea why I had played the speech on my cassette player. He thought I had enjoyed it and sought inspiration from it. Now in the absence of the cassette player he became the speaker for me.

He looked away down the street.

I was not used to passing time in the company of the kind of bad-mannered, drunk, reckless and lowly people that loitered at the Shaheed Minar. They smelt of burnt meat and rotten tomatoes. All poor people smelt that way, I thought. It was not because they hadn't had a bath in weeks. The inside of their heads was rotten. Like the inside of my head was rotten now. My feet were soiled. There was a layer of dust on my cheeks and neck. It was madness to leave the flat, but I was bored. Though I was sure most people would not recognize me, I did not want to broadcast to them that Nur Hussain and I were together, and that at that moment I belonged exactly where he belonged.

'You are drawing attention,' I said. 'Sit down. Sit down right now, or I am leaving.' My warning had no effect on him.

www.pathagar.com

He was not an introvert after all—at least not as introverted as I had thought. He walked away from me, stood before the columns of the Minar with glimmering eyes and continued to speak. Every word exploded in his mouth and then came out through his lips with an extraordinary vigour. He spoke only the part I had played on the cassette player. Then he sat down beside me, and said it would never happen again. But seeing that I was still gloomy, he got up to speak again, as if he would not stop until I had smiled. Small slum-children sitting on the dusty ground raised their heads to him, and a few rickshaw-wallahs pulled the brakes gently and stopped to listen. Some pedestrians paused to join the crowd and shopkeepers pushed their heads through windows to see what was going on.

He had an extraordinary power—I felt it under my skin. Though he spoke only a few sentences, it seemed he was able to rouse his audience exactly as Sheikh Mujib had done. He ended with *Joy Bangla* and the crowd shouted back *Joy Bangla.*

As he came to sit beside me, I pulled myself away slightly. 'You don't know me,' I said to him; 'don't pretend that you do. The person you see before you now is not the real person I am. I may also not be the same person I will be in the near future. You want to embarrass yourself, go ahead, do it; nobody will stop you. But don't you ever do things that I am uncomfortable about. You understand me?' He wanted to say something but I said we would have the rest of the conversation at home. 'Try to keep private matters private. It is better that way.'

A woman, whom I had seen collecting empty glass bottles from city drains and drying them on the concrete pavement, slapped her two little boys when they began a fight. 'Tell us about the liberation struggle,' she then said to Nur Hussain. 'Tell us something about our future.' Though he did not speak, she opened the knot of her sari and threw a coin at his feet, as a token of her respect for him. 'Take this money, please,' she said. 'Protect our motherland.' Some others in the crowd followed her. They threw whatever little money they had on them. I watched him as he bent down and collected the coins one by one, frequently looking at me with a worried face.

I wished I had never allowed him into my house. Who would steal from a beggar? I sat there hiding my eyes behind my palm, disgust

www.pathagar.com

filling my throat. A small line of sweat appeared on my nose. I could imagine people were looking at me instead of at him though he was doing the speaking. Who is this person—they were asking in their minds—is he suffering from a serious mental disorder? What is he doing here with that imbecile? I could not raise my eyes to look at them, to answer their contempt for me.

Then we walked home, silently, I before him, following the narrow neighbourhood street. The street was momentarily lit by the lanterns on the rickshaws passing by. Through that light I looked back. He was pressing the coins to his chest.

At home he poured the coins on the kitchen table and went to his room. He did not count them. Neither did I—until after supper when I was sure he was asleep. I did not know what was happening to me but I found myself closing the kitchen door, cleaning the coins on a wet towel, counting them several times. The coins, many of them with Sheikh Mujib's portrait on them, shone in the light.

That night, and three more nights after that, I sat at the table up to midnight. My head ached. Too many thoughts had surfaced there. Was it pity in people's minds that compelled them to throw their money at him when they needed that money more than he did? Though he actually did not extend his hands to people to receive their coins, was he indirectly begging from them in the name of Sheikh Mujib because I was not in a position to help him any more? Did he feel real love for Sheikh Mujib when he recited the speech which helped him imitate his voice so enthusiastically, while I felt nothing as I listened to it on my cassette player?

When I looked at Nur Hussain the following morning, I thought he looked rather like Sheikh Mujib. My heart shook but I quickly gathered myself. After a few hours, I looked at him again in the daylight when he stood at the window. He did have a certain resemblance to Sheikh Mujib, I had to admit. I believed the woman was right. She did what was a very natural thing to do—she admired him. I believed the crowd knew what they were doing when they sacrificed their precious coins.

I played the speech again, not this time to understand the inner meaning of Mujib's words, but to see if Nur Hussain was present in his voice. I did not have to play it for long. The opening sentences

www.pathagar.com

were enough. He was there, in an unbelievably unambiguous way. It would not be easy to separate them by listening to their voices only, I thought. Nur was Sheikh Mujib's copy, a true, honest, reliable and enviable copy.

'I am sorry for what I did,' he said on the fourth day. 'I did something that was very painful for you. I should have controlled myself. If you want, I can go back to the Shaheed Minar and return the money. Maybe the exact people would not be there, but whoever is there would be grateful to receive one or two coins.'

He rose, as I did not answer. He took his shirt, slowly collected the coins in his pocket and prepared to leave.

'It is not necessary any more,' I said. He looked back, surprised. 'Yes.' I sat on the sofa, looking for an easy way to communicate with him. 'I do not know what I am thinking,' I said, after a long pause, 'but I am thinking something. I cannot tell even if you as a person would like to be associated with it, though it is about you and involving you. But I will explain it to you in detail so that you know what is what, and you can pull me back if I appear unreasonable and crazy. Come sit.'

www.pathagar.com

8

The Speech

From my pile of books I pulled out a booklet published during the war. It was called *The Motherland*. It contained Sheikh Mujib's entire speech. I separated the relevant pages and glued them to the wall. Nur Hussain began to read immediately.

I could see he was not good at reading. Sometimes he sounded out every syllable of a word but could not connect them together to pronounce it correctly. He even forgot the sentences he had known by heart when he enunciated the words syllable by syllable at my request.

'Minor problems,' I said, like an experienced adult education instructor who knew numerous tactics to counter learning disabilities. He should not worry. It was only a few hours' job. I told him I would read the speech end to end so that he knew it was not intimidating at all as a piece of text. There was nothing to panic about. I took several deep breaths and began. He sat attentively, looking at me. I would show him how Sheikh Mujib spoke it in his own way. Sheikh Mujib did not pronounce all the words correctly, following the standard rules of our language; but he was able to create a beautiful music in the speech that helped people understand his spirit. His commitment appeared heartfelt to them. He had used judicious repetitions, short sentences and striking but easily relatable images to make his content easier to grasp.

When I finished, Nur was delighted. That was the first time he had heard the speech in full.

'Can you memorize the speech?' I asked.

'Absolutely.'

He wanted only three days. Every comma and semicolon would be in the exact place, he said, and began reading.

He did memorize the whole speech in three days, startling me

www.pathagar.com

further. I sat before him and heard him several times. I made notes. It was not easy to capture the tone of such a speech in its entirety, especially when there was no audience before us. But he made it, though with some limitations. 'Here you must pause,' I said. 'Give your listeners time to digest your words. It is noisy out there and everyone cannot think quickly. Listen.' I played the sentence on the cassette player. He spoke and paused. 'Longer,' I said, 'a little bit longer, please. If people do not understand you, they will not respond correctly. If they do not respond correctly, the purpose is lost.' I reversed the cassette and played it again for him. 'You see?' He paused more and asked if that was enough. 'Not enough,' I said, and replayed it before saying the sentence myself. He laughed at himself for using shorter pauses. He laughed and then became serious and terrified, as if Sheikh Mujib would not forgive him for misreading his speech. 'Becoming an orator needs patience and humility,' I said. 'Empathy is a great virtue.'

When he had the pauses right, sooner than I had anticipated, I turned my focus to getting him to speak faster or slower, to create a sense of enthusiasm, and adding easily executable dramatic effects where applicable. It was no use explaining to him what adjectives or adverbs or prepositions were, how Mujib had used them in his speech as tools of persuasion and dynamism. He would not be able to analyse the structural components of a piece of writing as a professional grammarian would. It was not necessary either. He did not need to know what complex political or philosophical or psychological or historical or patriotic cause or trauma compelled Mujib to produce his words. The style was already decided. The meaning was already set. I wanted to go through the words with Nur, again and again, so that he received them experientially. He was an audio-kinaesthetic learner, as far as I could estimate; hearing was his best method. We had the cassette player which was helping us greatly; now we needed to maintain some movement, probably walking around the room, or speaking in the dark, standing on the road.

'Excellent,' I said in the end. 'Well done. Today you have accomplished something that will define the rest of your life. Today you are ready to please anyone anywhere in the country with your ingenuity. You are not just a boy any more. You are in contact with

www.pathagar.com

the heart and the soul of this land. There is no wall before you. Nothing can slow you down.' But he must continue practising. He must know where he was guiding his audience. On the one side were the Pakistanis who discriminated against us by imposing their will on us, and on the other side the dream of a free Bangladesh, the right to choose our destiny—Sheikh Mujib utilized this compare-and-contrast system of communication so effectively that seventy million Bangladeshis could not help but start a passionate and immediate struggle for liberation. He gave them a choice. They instantly knew what to do.

One of the aspects of the speech that I thought would be difficult to explain took actually very little time. 'How many voices do you notice in that speech?' I asked.

'Why, one,' he said. 'Wasn't it Sheikh Mujib who gave the whole speech?'

That was not a correct answer but that was also not an unintelligent answer. I was ready to explain.

Sheikh Mujib gave the whole speech, I said, but if he looked carefully, he would see several Sheikh Mujibs in action; one of them was sympathetic, one was analytical, one a rebel, and one a villager who spoke in a local dialect. And I had spoken to him of Sheikh Mujib the poet before, who spoke with infectious enthusiasm. All those voices came together and created an organic whole: Sheikh Mujib the person. To produce the speech successfully, one would need to give careful attention to all those voices. I wanted to give him an example by quoting a specific sentence from the speech, but he interrupted and said: 'For example—*I have come before you today with a heavy heart.* Wasn't Sheikh Mujib sympathizing with the people of Bangladesh in this opening line? Wasn't he suffering because people in general were suffering under Pakistani rule?'

He practised all day long. His words echoed off the walls and bounced off my ears. I knew he deserved to win the confidence of his audience because of the animation and force with which he spoke. I could visualize people clapping, coins coming out of their pockets.

www.pathagar.com

9

At the Barber's

My objective was to present Nur Hussain in the most effective manner possible before the target audience, so that at the end of the day even the most destitute felt they were taking something home in exchange for their coins. As far as I could understand, he had completed only one major requirement by memorizing Sheikh Mujib's speech. Though he had exceeded my expectations, it would really not amount to anything until other requirements were also duly fulfilled. If people wanted to hear Sheikh Mujib speak, they could play cassettes of his speeches. They were available in every electronics shop and convenience store. Even vegetable sellers sold them. If people did not own a cassette player, they could sit at a restaurant, order a cup of tea, and enjoy the speech for a few minutes. There would not be a restaurant manager in the country who would dare to refuse to play that speech for his customers. That was not what we were planning. We were planning to arrange a live presentation. A life-size Sheikh Mujib would stand on the podium, walk, move his arms, automatically raise his voice, empathize, and speak from his heart.

Therefore, the second requirement: attending to his look.

That included changing his hairstyle. One must not think it was someone speaking like him; he must be present through Nur Hussain. After all, we were talking about a man whom everyone knew, who was agreeable, ardent, confident and calm. Imitating his speaking style would not be easy. It would not be like singing for people's entertainment in a noisy, crowded market under a gloomy sky to sell poisonous pesticides or stinky aphrodisiacs. There would be no instrumental aid, no unconnected add-ons from Lata Mangeshkar, no monkey dance, no snake charmer in action, no jokes from Gopal Bhar, no commonly used display of pity-evoking, shockingly

www.pathagar.com

deformed, bizarre human faces. Nur Hussain would have to please people all by himself.

I took him to the barbershop down the street. I told him not to be nervous; it would be done before he knew it. We were not shaving his head. 'Relax. We only need some minor adjustments.'

Then I explained to the barber what type of cut we wanted. 'Look at that picture,' I said, pointing at the portrait of Sheikh Mujib over the looking glass. 'Look at every line, every curve, and every shade minutely.' Did he see how Sheikh Mujib had his hair pushed back in the front clearing his forehead? And the sideburns, those stuffily Victorian ultra-conservative sideburns, which balanced his facial features? 'That is what we want. Like the hair of Sheikh Mujib; nothing more, nothing less.'

The barber, confused and hesitant, looked at me and then at Nur Hussain and finally at the portrait. If anyone ever requested a particular hairstyle in this neighbourhood, he said, it was the hairstyle of a movie actor, for example, Razzak's or Raj Kapoor's, or someone from the English catalogues, say, the ducktail style with the high pompadour of Elvis Presley. He could not believe a stoic Sheikh Mujib could occupy someone's imagination because of his hairstyle.

Sheikh Mujib had no hairstyle, he said, with a certain irritation. Were we joking? He had been a hairdresser all his life—no less than twenty years now—but in that long time there had not been a single moment when Mujib's hairstyle had drawn his attention. Then he explained. Sheikh Mujib had no ears, no cheeks, no jaw, no nose, no mouth, no brows and no forehead. He was just a face, a face without features. When he looked at Sheikh Mujib, he saw himself. That happened to every citizen in the country. It was the person inside the heap of flesh that mattered. Besides, he elucidated, if Sheikh Mujib had a hairstyle, his hairstylist would have been famous by now, considering his extraordinary rise through the years. Had anyone ever heard of any such hairstylist?

He was a rogue. A rogue with a quiet, gentle face. I had seen many such in my life. 'You do whatever we ask you to do. We are aware that Sheikh Mujib is not a fashion-conscious man, but we want his low-maintenance style.'

He sat on the stool, had a silent moment, and then asked if we

www.pathagar.com

were not going to change our minds later. A man with Sheikh Mujib's hairstyle, but without his substance, would look awkward, if not funny, he warned.

Awkward or serious, he could leave that to us to consider. 'Keep your mind locked within your mind, if you have one. We are not here for idle curiosity alone. We have a purpose. You can go ahead.'

The barber observed Sheikh Mujib's portrait more closely and then sharpened his scissors on leather strips before beginning his job. Nur Hussain sat on the stool, closing his eyes, and bent his head from side to side when the barber directed. I sat on another stool in the corner, from where I could monitor the progress of the scissors.

Perhaps the barber thought he was doing an audacious job by creating Sheikh Mujib's style on someone who was not Sheikh Mujib. Perhaps he thought nobody should try to be like Sheikh Mujib because that would undermine Sheikh Mujib as a person, as a leader, and as the head of the state. His face remained dark as he worked. He stopped several times, looked out of the window, filled his lungs with fresh air, and consulted the portrait before getting back to his task. 'I don't know,' he muttered, 'I don't know. This is outrageous. This cannot be happening. A very unusual day for a barber.' But he seemed to be comfortable, if not satisfied, with his work as he removed the black cape from Nur Hussain. He moved backwards, to the rear of the room, to look at him from a distance. Then he came back, lifted a mirror behind him to show him the back of his head.

Instead of looking at the mirror, Nur Hussain looked at me.

'That's the best I can do,' said the barber. 'Now if you don't like it, you may find some other hairdresser next time. There are many on the main street.'

'You yourself should move to the main street,' I told him, after observing Nur Hussain's head from a 360-degree angle. 'Or better go to Gulshan or Dhanmondi residential area where people buy style with heavy cash. You've done such a fantastic job.'

He turned the mirror towards himself and watched his smiling face.

Nur Hussain's face became bright.

'Now give him a quick shave, will you?' I said. 'We don't have the whole day.'

www.pathagar.com

He took out a Balaka blade from the drawer.

'Look at me,' I said. 'Look at me. Do we look like two cheap village rascals arriving at the city port for the first time? Throw away that rubbish. Use your sharpest double-edge classic razor.' I also directed him as he opened the creamy lather tube, poured water in a cup from a jar. I said, 'No, no, that is not going to work. Cold water? That would make his skin hard and beard stiff. Splash some warm water on his face, will you?' He did not have a hot water system at the shop, so I advised him to collect some from the next-door tea stall. He had already considered us the worst of his customers, but I did not give him any chance to speak a word. A man like him needed to be kept under constant pressure. 'Very good,' I said, when he returned. 'Now skim the brush back and forth across his cheek. Change to circular motion. Good, good. Create a rich lather. Don't rush. Don't you irritate his skin. We don't want any shave bumps. That's it. Rinse your razor after every stroke. What are you doing? Are you crazy? Remove the clogged hair. Hygiene is the most important part of a man's grooming rituals. Didn't anyone say that to you before? Be very careful at the neck. Don't play with those pimples on the jaw. They are not ready to be popped. Now look at that portrait; observe, wait, think, remember. Time to trim his moustache. Comb it down; slowly. Don't be a butcher. Trim it there with gentle downward strokes. Be extremely precise, will you? Haven't you eaten anything this week? Why is your hand trembling? Left side will be shorter, more, more, so that it is as high as the right side. Bravo. Now apply some aftershave balm.'

www.pathagar.com

10

The Coat

Now the next requirement: the coat, the Mujib coat; Sheikh Mujib's signature style.

It was a sleeveless black coat to be worn over a white punjabi. Every Awami League supporter, worker and leader had one. They wore it during party conventions, public meetings and election campaigns, or just any time they went out, at the tea stall with neighbours, at a marriage ceremony. It was a demonstration of a person's loyalty to the Awami League as a political party, and to Sheikh Mujib as its leader. During the war we considered it a symbol of patriotism. Only those opposed to independence would speak ill of it. Most recently, people had started to wear that coat when they went to pray in the mosque. They wore it during Eid festivals and even bought it for their children who did not know why they must wear a black coat on a shining, beautiful, festive day. Some mosque assistants who called for prayers had also been seen to wear it; some said it made their voice deeper and sincere, like Sheikh Mujib's—something much admired within the spiritual community.

The coat gave Sheikh Mujib a graceful look. It made him look wise and solemn. Wearing that coat, he could easily stand beside Gandhi, Castro, Mao Tse Tung, or any other world leader of that stature. Nations of the world first saw it when he spoke at the UN General Assembly. Some called it an opportunity to spread his rebellious image abroad, to internationalize his call for independence for all suppressed people of the world. A few weeks after the assembly, a front-page picture in a Bengali newspaper showed a farmer in rural Bolivia cultivating his land wearing a Mujib coat. The country looked like our country: the water, the fields, and the trees, the winding village paths, the sky, everything; only the man's skin was different. He looked whitish. That difference was lost under the

www.pathagar.com

charm of the Mujib coat. The coat had the power to make all men look the same—strong and unafraid in the quest for freedom.

Another newspaper in Dhaka published a feature article on the coat on its fashion page. Women's salwar kameez and cloaks were pushed down to the bottom of the page to make room for it. The paper printed a picture of Sheikh Mujib sitting on a sofa in the comfort of his living room. The coat was buttoned to the neck. There were two other pictures under it. One of them showed him sitting with noted Awami League leaders, all of them wearing that coat. That was to suggest the coat's social acceptance—it was as professional as any coat worn in the West. It was dressing with a message: unity among colleagues. Another picture showed a folded coat with a Montegrappa Privilege Gioiello Peacock silver fountain pen and a pair of specs luxuriously placed upon it. That picture depicted the coat as a component of a sophisticated lifestyle. The writer of the article, entitled 'Men's Wardrobe', also placed the coat in a historical perspective. Whereas all other coats were designed to be worn with ties, the Mujib coat was never to be worn with a tie, and it was the only coat that was sleeveless. 'From Bangladesh to the world—a style to admire.'

I took Nur Hussain to a young tailor in the fashionable area. As far as I could tell from the outfits he had on display, he specialized in tailoring for ladies. There were salwar kameez and lehengas swinging from wooden hangers; there were ghagras and cholis. But when I asked him if he could make us a coat, he agreed graciously. He said he had had the good luck to examine the tailoring techniques of a Mujib coat not long ago, when he was an assistant at another tailoring house. It would not be difficult to make one by himself. I agreed. He measured Nur Hussain's chest, his neck, and the distance between his neck and the waistline, and gave us a rough idea about how much the cloth and the tailoring might cost us. It was not a fortune, I found; quite within my capacity. I knew if I wanted to present Nur Hussain before a crowd in a professional manner, I would have to be prepared to invest a little money. It was a must. But I pressed the tailor to lower the price mentioning his inexperience. 'The Mujib coat is not a dress of the past,' I argued. 'It is the dress of the future. There may come a time when you will make only this type

www.pathagar.com

of coat, nothing else. You will forget what a kameez is. You will say only non-smart tailors make ladieswears; a tailor like you goes for something extraordinary. I am offering you a chance to do exactly that. I am giving you a chance to see your future. It is up to you to accept it or not.' I told him I could spend only seventy per cent of what he was asking for. He pushed a little and we settled for seventy-five per cent. The coat would be ready in a week, he said. He had a bridal dress to deliver. I bargained again. 'A week? You cannot be serious. Why do you need a week? Just fold the piece of cloth, cut it with scissors, and then quickly put a couple of buttons down the front; anyone can do that before afternoon tea. We have liberated fifty-six thousand square miles of homeland in nine months; now he wants as long as seven days to make a two and a half foot coat! How ridiculous!'

He understood my impatience and halved the delivery time.

I could not wait that long either. I went to him in the evening of the second day to ask if he was working on it, if he needed to take some more measurements of Nur Hussain, and on the third evening to see if he had finished, if he needed a hand to fix the buttons. He was displeased to see me and said I was slowing him down by visiting him without notice.

On the fourth morning I woke up and the first thing I did was remind Nur Hussain it was our delivery day; we must be at the tailor's as soon as possible. We would eat breakfast upon our return. The breakfast would taste more delicious if we had the coat with us. He got ready instantly.

It was not the most perfect coat I had ever seen. It did not fit him at the waist. Besides, there were just too many buttons, and the distance between them was not equal. The material was too soft for a coat. The two bottom pockets were saggy. But the coat was black and Nur Hussain liked it. It was his first coat ever. Naturally, I silenced my dissatisfaction. 'Thank you,' I told the tailor, as he sat on the cot with great satisfaction on his face. 'Thank you, you've done a terrific job. You have been able to hide your age under your experience. You will make many more coats after this, I am sure. Once Sheikh Mujib knows it is you who have made this coat, he may order a pair for himself. Then you will be recognized across the country. Never be nervous to welcome new challenges.'

www.pathagar.com

Then we went to the clothing store to buy a punjabi shirt. I sat before the cashier with money in hand. One of the assistants spread several punjabis before Nur Hussain. He tried a couple and chose one from the Mohammedia brand. I paid the money.

At home he put on the punjabi and buttoned the coat up to his neck. When he pushed his hair back with his fingers and stood before me, I knew we were almost there.

www.pathagar.com

11

The Specs, the Pipe and Some Necessary Advice

That same day I bought him a pair of specs with thick black frames from a newly established optician.

The automatic glass door opened before us with soft music. We walked on the thin carpet and went directly to the sales counter. The salesperson was an old man with long hair and long beard and a white gown over a white-collared shirt. He asked if we had a prescription, and if we were looking for vision correction.

'Prescription? Vision correction? What are you talking about?'

He gestured at the 'Schedule an Exam' poster on the wall beside the window. It read: 'When it comes to protecting your eyes, our eye care specialists make your experience easy.' 'Eye exam provides a comprehensive picture of your visual ability,' he said. 'It is key to your proper eye health. Your vision may change significantly but you may not feel the slightest pain in your heart.'

I liked the fact that he behaved so politely with us. Manners of this standard were not seen in many places nowadays. After walking across a whole country, and witnessing all the destruction caused by the war, you came to him and found he was living in a sane world. There was no problem here. Everything was clean, professional and scientific. Optometrists were working hard to treat people's vision problems. Brand-name spectacles, designer and prescription sunglasses filled the revolving shelves. The benefits of freedom had started to show.

'No,' I said. 'Just for everyday comfort; for eye protection against flying dust; full-frame with supporting pads on the bridge, if possible. No smoky quartz or reading stones.'

'Any history of myasthenia gravis, diabetes or atherosclerosis?'

www.pathagar.com

'Does he look like he requires assistance with walking? What do you people think you are? For God's sake. No, nothing of that sort.'

He thought a few seconds and then directed us to one of the cases right in the front.

The vintage-style plastic specs sat on Nur Hussain's nose like a beautiful ornament. They flattered his face. The black-toned arms clasped his ears perfectly. An absolute fashion statement, I thought. Once combined with the whiteness of the punjabi and the blackness of the coat, the specs would shine.

'Our bestselling item,' the man said. 'Suits freethinking, creative individuals. Comes with a manufacturer's warranty. If you are not hundred per cent satisfied with your purchase, bring it back within ninety days. No questions asked. And what about you?'

'What about me?'

'You don't wear glasses?'

'Why would I wear glasses?'

'To see clearly. To protect what you are left with.'

I went close to him. 'Listen,' I said, 'I do not want to upset you by criticizing you for your attitude. I also do not want to say that maybe, maybe you are too old for this job. Consider this: first you tried to invent a disease for him which he did not have so that you could press us to undergo some unnecessary tests. For courtesy's sake we have overlooked it. And now you are saying I do not see clearly, I need to take glasses. What do you mean to say?'

'Nothing,' he said, as his face turned gloomy. 'Nothing.' He walked quietly to the main sales counter and spent a long time to produce a receipt for us. Then, as we were ready to leave, he smiled suddenly. 'I do lots of push-sales,' he said. 'That's why they say I am a good salesman. Hope you didn't mind.'

A person of that character did not deserve to be honoured with an affirmative response.

Next I bought Nur Hussain a nine-inch, handcrafted walnut-wood tobacco pipe. Sturdy, thick, clean looking, its bowl was one inch in diameter and one inch deep. It was detachable into three pieces for easy cleaning. The seller said the pipe might smell strongly of smoke after being used, and needed to be cleaned more often than other

www.pathagar.com

pipes, but I did not want to spend a lot on this either. Nur Hussain was not going to smoke tobacco. Our main purpose was to create a charade. I showed him a picture of Sheikh Mujib holding a pipe between his lips. 'That's what you'll do. That's what people want to see. You want to try? Go ahead.' The pipe made him look older than he was. How old was Sheikh Mujib at the time he gave the historic 7 March speech? Fifty-one, if he was born in 1920. The pipe made Nur Hussain look at least forty. He would put it in his mouth after he had finished the speech and would not remove it until after the crowd had stopped throwing coins at his feet and we had found a rickshaw to take us home.

The hair, the moustache, the coat, the punjabi, the specs and the pipe—all were there now, in a purposeful combination, ready to function and serve. Whatever their standard, they were present. All that was left was to lay down a few important rules, without which the props would not bring the expected results. First: Nur Hussain must control his desire to speak after the speech. 'No socializing,' I said, 'absolutely no socializing of any sort.' Sheikh Mujib had a hundred things to do every day. He would not talk with people individually, and anything important he had to say had already been said in his speech. The public must be satisfied with hearing his speech. If they wanted to speak to him, to inform him of their problems, they must follow the official protocol or contact the relevant section of the prime minister's office. We would tell them where that office was. Obviously, it would be our flat.

The second rule I set was that he would not eat anything in public, for example, in a restaurant or tea stall; neither would he bite a piece of sugarcane while on the street, something young people like him did unknowingly. 'Any eating must be done at home and in private.' Nobody ever saw Sheikh Mujib eat. Nobody knew how he looked while eating. An eating scene might reveal the fact that Nur Hussain was not after all any different from anyone down the road. Eating in public would also raise the question: what food did Sheikh Mujib eat, prime minister that he was? If he ate what refugees ate, there would be no difference between them. So a rigorous confidentiality must be maintained.

www.pathagar.com

The next rule was that he would not eat fish with hard bones; they might get stuck in his throat causing choking and bleeding. Attempting to remove the bones with his fingers might cause further damage. He must chew his food properly before swallowing. That would also help proper digestion and keep him in good health to deliver the speech most attentively. He must go to sleep on time and sleep enough so that he had a balanced temperament.

www.pathagar.com

12

Counting Coins

We made a good team, he and I. I made the plans, he delivered the speech. I selected the venues, he followed me without question—even when it was too hot and the humidity was high and the punjabi was wet with sweat and the coat was the most impractical piece of clothing to wear. I collected the coins, counted them three times, and told him how much we had made; he went to bed peacefully, with trust.

Soon the time came when I selected his food and checked the size of the potatoes. He ate only after I had approved them. It appeared to be simple fastidiousness on my part. I was controlling his life, he might say. I was standing between him and self-determination. But I believed it was my duty to make sure he realized how precious his voice was for us and how quickly we might turn into nothing if we did not proceed carefully. Destruction was not very far from us. We saw it every day, when we went out to speak, when we spoke, when we returned home after speaking. We had to be extra cautious. He understood me; that was why he never disputed my decisions.

We went out almost every day now and within a few weeks covered all the local areas, some areas more than once. Then we moved out farther, closer to the bus stand, the overpass on the highway, the district court building, the old book market and the pharmacy square. We attended the week-long city fair every day and spoke several times in the same spot, always to the great elation of our audience. With every delivery he became better, more comfortable and natural, and every time he spoke, our pockets filled with coins.

The unit controller of the city fair treated us with respect. Why wouldn't he? He wanted his part of the fair to be filled with visitors; especially in the morning hours, when the city refused to wake up. He came to us the third evening and proposed we come early the

www.pathagar.com

next day and speak. With his delivery, Nur Hussain could pull the limited number of visitors from other units to this part of the fair. That might help the businesses make some good money right at the start of the day.

'Our pleasure,' I said. 'We'll come here at nine sharp tomorrow, when the fair opens. We'll do the speech as many times as needed. But you may ask your business partners to be generous to us. They might send someone with a few coins for us before the night falls. Wouldn't it look odd if they made money because of us but did not share it with us?'

Nur Hussain always kept a copy of the speech in his pocket. Sometimes he read it loudly between his speeches, usually sitting on a rickshaw. That happened when he remembered he had skipped a sentence or a paragraph during the speech. Even though I had heard him many times, and had read the speech many times before, I did not notice what he had skipped. My attention was locked in the space before him, the small warm circular space where the crowd would throw their coins. I had seen him look at that solemn space once or twice while standing with the pipe in his mouth. That was all. It was my space; I knew what was happening there. I had to make sure that it protected us, and it was well protected. I kept it clean and threw some coins from my pocket on a handkerchief before he began speaking so the crowd knew what to do.

But he was a perfectionist. Failing to maintain the proper sequence of paragraphs in the speech worried him. That worry came from his heart and covered his face with irritation. I had seen him refuse food or drink when that happened. Consulting the copy in his pocket did not always remove that irritation. I told him he mustn't speak *like* Sheikh Mujib because he was Sheikh Mujib. I told him he must speak without worry, without bothering about what he had skipped. If Sheikh Mujib was worried he would not have been a pioneer to people. He would have scared his audience. His political disciples would have thought he was not in control and he was not the man they wanted to trust with the future of the country.

'I am trying and trying but I cannot control my mind,' Nur said, worrying me more. 'I speak a sentence and I look at the people before me. I get angry when I see the same people sitting before me hour

www.pathagar.com

after hour. If they follow me carefully, they may understand I am speaking the same paragraphs in many different ways.'

He sat looking at me, searching for a solution. The crowd did not have the speech memorized by heart, I said, and they were not there to test him. They gathered before him because of the feeling they had experienced when Sheikh Mujib spoke on the 7th of March. His job was to feed their imagination, to recreate that exact Mujibesque feeling by adding words to words, by stacking passion upon passion; minor changes in the order of paragraphs or speaking an incomplete paragraph did not harm anything. He was doing a great job, I said, and to give him courage, scratched out some sentences from the speech and let him read it.

'See,' I explained, 'even after those brutal deletions the message of the speech remains the same.'

He looked at me with utter disbelief, as if nobody had the right to modify the words of Sheikh Mujib. I had to respond reasonably. 'Do the Awami League play the speech in full on the national day?' I asked. 'They do not. They repeat the most effective passages from his speech whenever they need to. They have edited him more brutally than anybody else. Then why should you concern yourself about losing a few sentences?'

'It wouldn't bother you if I skipped something?' he asked.

'Not at all,' I said. 'Not at all.' I could not tell from where he had got the idea. I was surprised, but there was no time to show my surprise at that moment, he needed to be assured immediately. 'Who cares about Sheikh Mujib, anyway,' I said, 'when we are in the field? I do not. This is business. I do not care even about them that sit before us. They are nationalists and will accept the devil as prophet if Sheikh Mujib recommends it. Becoming a nationalist is not a matter of decision; it means one has locked one's mind forever. No reason or practical advice or evidence is strong enough to unlock it. These people are in a trance—the indolent, seductive trance of Bengali nationalism. We are creating a trance within that trance so that they reach into their pockets. Whatever you speak or do not speak will not move them from it.'

Because of my intervention, Sheikh Mujib's speech became shorter and shorter in Nur Hussain's voice day after day. Sometimes he

www.pathagar.com

began with *Joy Bangla* and ended with *Joy Bangla*. Sometimes he continued chanting *Joy Bangla* until he believed the crowd had thrown enough coins. A few times he ended the speech in the middle and then by going back uttered some popular quotations before chanting *Joy Bangla* to end the speech. That happened towards the end of the day, when he felt tired, but I pushed him hard, telling him repeatedly we had at least three more groups to speak to before going home. Sometimes it happened that he chanted *Joy Bangla* in the middle of the speech to draw the attention of the people who had stopped on their way, and then began the speech from the beginning. Then there was the rain. It came suddenly. Sometimes it came with thunder and lightning when he was halfway through the speech. He had to chant *Joy Bangla* immediately so that the crowd had enough time to throw coins before running into a shop, a tea stall or the nearest post office.

As long as he delivered the passage where Sheikh Mujib said—*We had given blood in 1952, we had won a mandate in 1954, but the Pakistani military government continued to enslave us year after year*—I told him, he was sure to satisfy the crowd. Did he think a longer speech generated more money? My calculations did not say so. More money depended on visiting more places, speaking to more crowds. Smaller crowds were better, I said; people standing at the end of large gatherings did not come forward to throw coins for us. Except for one or two, they moved on once he had finished the speech.

Every time he spoke to a crowd, I surveyed the people who made up that crowd, and watched who threw coins. I applied a value system to their clothes, their sense of cleanliness, and their ways of expressing excitement at the speech. I could tell if they were moved by his speech, if they believed in what he said, and if they were having some sort of conversation with themselves.

By observing the formation of the crowd, I came to a conclusion. If the crowd consisted of poor, illiterate, working-class people, unemployed, rootless people, people from slums, rescued from mudslides, devastated by cyclones, we earned more coins than if it were moneyed, middle-class, educated people working downtown. I saw shopkeepers extend their heads out of the window but never saw

www.pathagar.com

them put their hands in the cash counter to take a coin out for us. At best, they saluted us when we passed and offered us paan. I also noticed, regretfully, that only the poor heard the speech from beginning to end attentively and applauded Nur Hussain after it ended, while the educated stood some way off, heard a sentence or two, and then went on their way. The poor sometimes got tearful; they wanted to touch Nur Hussain's hands to receive his blessings. Some of them even ran closer to embrace him wearing their filthy clothes. Often I had to stand between him and them. I had to tell them he had another speech elsewhere, his coat mustn't be soiled. They would not give up until I had embraced them on his behalf.

I hated those that did not throw coins at us. Among them I hated most the clean ones; the ones that gave me the idea that they understood our trick. Sometimes I thought they were accusing us of cheating people. They stood for one or two minutes and then left. Why did they stop for that short time? Because of the magnetic power of the speech. Then why did they leave? The only answer I could come up with was they did not need a sovereign country; they did not need Sheikh Mujib's leadership. They did well during the British period, under Pakistani dictators, and they would do well if the country fell to dictatorship again. They were egoistical and snobbish. I believed they had not gone to the war and had never spoken to a freedom fighter like I had.

My observation affected our strategy to a large extent. I selected smaller roads, shanty houses, and polluted and densely populated areas of the city, instead of its popular markets where the petty-minded condescending well-off people shopped.

It worked.

www.pathagar.com

13

A Story for the Press

Since selecting a venue was my responsibility, I would sometimes go out alone. I would walk from street to street, neighbourhood to neighbourhood, looking for places with floating crowds. I would survey which spot in the slum was easily accessible for people, where rootless people gathered to pass their idle noon, where they sat to play cards. Sometimes I would take a bus and sit in a corner seat looking through the window, watching people milling about on the pavement, walking into stores, waiting in the sun for buses. I would take notes in a small notebook and review them before going to sleep to select the most suitable venues for the next few days.

While on these tours, sometimes I would have a conversation of my own. I would take a hard look at my life, at my career, and then review what I was doing with Nur Hussain. Just months ago I was a journalist. I had a set of responsibilities, a set of properly defined tasks to perform every day. I had a dream, and I could speak about my dream. I was surrounded by people who understood what I thought—at least I believed so. There was excitement in it, if not satisfaction. But now I had no plan. Most shamefully, I was now living on someone else's ability to earn. I could well be on the street tomorrow, one more rootless person in the company of thousands of rootless persons; without a future, without any goal. In addition, I was playing with people's helplessness. With a fake Sheikh Mujib I was manufacturing dreams for them. I was convincing them the future was behind us; it had frozen the moment Sheikh Mujib opened his mouth in 1971; now we must live in the past forever; we must rot there year after year after year.

As the bus moved past the slums, I imagined myself living in one of the tents, passing a fortnight without a proper bath, hungrily looking at colourful food in nearby luxury restaurants, stealing from

www.pathagar.com

someone just as hungry as me. I envisioned myself walking in the rain, waking up in the rain in the middle of the night, and then running to look for a shelter for my children—perhaps inside the abandoned sewer pipes, underneath the unsafe railway bridge, in the deserted stables behind the hospital morgue, places I had seen crowded with hundreds of ill-fated people. Sometimes I thought I saw someone sitting on the pavement looking at the sun, disconnected from the chaos around him and forgetful of his clothes. His brain chemistry had changed. His ability to cope with stress had reduced. Any war, abuse, disaster, violence, accident or medical emergency would not be able to distract him. He would not know if the high wind from the northwest stole his body parts one by one, finally evaporating him one sunny day. I thought I knew that man. I thought I had known him for years. He lived with me, wore my clothes, used the same toilet, drew his eyes across the same newspaper columns, and knew everything about me. I looked at him more closely as the bus moved forward. It was a flash, just a flash, but I knew I was looking at myself. My body became cold with fear, my heart ached, and after that I saw nothing, until the bus reached its destination and the conductor freed me from a pathological state of numbness by shaking my shoulder.

Sometimes I would buy a copy of the *Freedom Fighter* and scan all its reports, features, editorial, comments, columns, from end to end. I would take my time. After all, this was the world I knew best. I turned the last page and checked the masthead at the bottom to see if Lutfuzzaman Babul was still its editor. He was. Why was it so difficult for him to see what I saw? Why couldn't he realize the ever-changing political reality of the nation? I went to the *Freedom Fighter* office that week. Lutfuzzaman Babul was in; he greeted me warmly and led me to his room.

We spoke about the weather: how hot the summer was, how cold the winter was going to be. He offered me tea for old times' sake, pushed his pad and pen aside, as he used to do when he was in a good mood.

He knew what I was doing. He hesitated to talk about it, filled the silences with scratching the back of his hands, cleaning the surface of the table with a feathery brush, checking the time on the wall clock every second minute; but finally he broke his silence, when I said I

www.pathagar.com

was not ashamed of myself. 'Everyone has to do something for survival, but that something does not have to define the real character of a person. I am what my head tells me I am. I am what my feelings say I am. I do not depend on anyone's approval.'

'Exactly,' he said. 'That's what I tell my staff all the time. A person cannot be anything until he knows what he is, and he can be anything when someone inside him says what he is not. But they are rude, immature, very unprofessional people to deal with; they do not believe me. They say, "Why is Khaleque Biswas doing this? Has he lost his mind? Does he want to embarrass all journalists in the country? If he cannot find employment as a reporter, let him serve as a compositor, a distributor, a news stand man, a paperboy. Is it good for him to leave the industry without looking for an opportunity because he can earn more money by entertaining beggars? Lutfuzzaman Babul, you're praising him for what he is not. You are just wasting words. Maybe you can send a message to him. Maybe you can explain to him that the last thing the country now needs is confusion, speeches about authority and governance. People have suffered a lot; let them have some rest now." I tell them they don't know you as I do. I tell them they should not underestimate Khaleque Biswas; he'll always be worth a piece of gold, not like them—shallow, cheap, foul-mouthed fraudsters. I tell them Nur Hussain is a brilliant addition to our political scenario. His is an extraordinary story. It is not about rags to riches—what they all expect it to be, so that they can make big headlines—but about anonymity to remembrance. He questions our collective memory, and highlights the tension between our political aspiration and political reality. It is interesting to notice how geniuses find their way into the world and stun a whole generation of people with their vitality and imagination.'

I told him meeting Nur Hussain had been an extraordinary incident for me and that he had extended my horizon. 'Without him I might not have seen what I now see. It is because of him that I understand what it means to be one of the people, or even deeper—to see how their minds work, and why they dare to trade their last coin for a slice of an obsolete dream.'

He looked for something in his drawer, but seemed to have not found it. 'When I heard the story from one of my reporters,' he said, 'I told him: let us follow Khaleque Biswas. He may not be working

www.pathagar.com

with us any more, but we know what he can accomplish; let us follow the story closely. Maybe we'll hire him back; we won't be in this downturn for long.' He searched his drawer again, and again he failed. 'If there is any chance that we can help him to say what he wants to say, it is our duty to help him. He was one of our founding reporters and he has done so many good things for us during the war.'

I felt irritated; what was he trying to do, blind me with those sugary words? 'I'm not here to talk about myself, though I've done a lot of that,' I said sternly. 'I want to talk about Nur Hussain. He's the speaker and far more important than I am. I want to talk about what his speaking means for me, for you, for anyone for that matter, including Sheikh Mujib.'

If it had been during the war, he would have locked the door immediately and pulled his chair closer to mine. He would have asked, in whispers, as if we were engaged in some clandestine projects, what amazing new thoughts I had come across, what my point was, if I had enough information, if my sources were genuine, if he should send a photographer to take a quick snap, and how fast I would be able to give my thoughts written shape. I was not allowed to leave my room until the story was ready, he would have said; if it were to be a late night, let it be a late night. What was one person's suffering compared to keeping a whole country waiting? But now he sat with his hands together, fingers between fingers; boorish, unmannerly.

I gave him the story I had written about Nur Hussain. 'This is an exclusive,' I said. I put the envelope before him and told him I had contextualized Nur Hussain in our broader national background, analysed him as a man on the road who had no clear idea about what freedom meant for him and what his life would be like a few years from now. I had concluded that a fake Sheikh Mujib like him was an indication of our political malady; that the number of fake Sheikh Mujibs would rise if the real Sheikh Mujib failed to act and prove his worth. People had not fought to live on pavements; they had not sacrificed their sons and daughters in a devastating war to go hungry and to remain unattended in sickness. The course of events had cast huge doubts over our country's leadership. Nature did not understand what it was doing to people by increasing the heat of the sun; nature did not have feelings. Pakistanis did not understand what they were

www.pathagar.com

doing by suppressing us, because they never understood the real value of freedom; they had always lived under generals and dictators. But Sheikh Mujib must know what harmed people because he was a leader of the people; people trusted him, they believed in his ability to lead and provide. An unthinkably dangerous situation would arise if Sheikh Mujib failed to administer the country as a visionary leader, reflecting the desires of its people. We might even end up with civil war.

'I wanted to show you the instructions I have given to the reporter whom I've advised to follow you,' he said, 'but I can't find them at this moment. A newspaper office is a no-man's land, things get lost pretty easily around here; you know that. But I can assure you this, Khaleque Biswas, whatever you've produced is good enough to be printed in the *Freedom Fighter*. I will give it to one of our specialists to look into and prepare a final version. In the meantime I want you to know that I think Nur Hussain can be our springboard for revisiting and pinpointing the role of political and intellectual leadership during times of national crisis. Through him we may be able to determine the bargaining capacity of an effective leader as well as the potential consequences of his failure. It is the responsibility of all concerned to keep real vigilance against the manifestations of failed leadership, in order to divert a national disaster.'

I noticed that he did not mention Sheikh Mujib's name, not even once, but I was happy when he said he would make sure the story was printed and that it was printed without delay.

He did print the story, in the next available issue of the *Freedom Fighter*, but as a small, one-column six-inch item, on the seventh page. Sunk among the classifieds, with their clear headlines and catchy texts, the story applauded Nur Hussain for the originality of his effort. He was another proof of how solemnly the people of Bangladesh had taken Sheikh Mujib into their hearts, it said. All the observations and statistics about people's sufferings and all the recommendations I had made for reshaping our present and making our future meaningful had been thrown out. The item ended by predicting that sooner or later all Bangladeshis must become Sheikh Mujibs; that was the only way to show him our sincerest appreciation for his leadership.

www.pathagar.com

14

Meeting Moina Mia

Sometime in December 1973, Moina Mia, local Awami League leader and member of parliament, sent his personal assistant to us. The man introduced himself as Abdul Ali and told us we were expected at Mia's residence the next afternoon. He would not say what the meeting was about, how Moina Mia knew us, why the rush.

'Have you come to the right people?' I asked. 'The number on the gate is not clearly visible. The number plate has seen at least twenty winters. The name of the road is nowhere to be found on the road. Are you sure you are looking for us?' He said yes, there was no mistake about it. 'When I do a job for my boss, I have all the time in the world to make sure that I have done it properly. I don't care about my own sufferings, illness or exhaustion. I don't care if house number 22 comes after house number 16 and if house number 16 follows house number 36. I care about what I am supposed to do for the MP and if I have done that up to his expectation.' He said my name was Khaleque Biswas and I had a talented young man living with me whose name was Nur Hussain and together we delivered Sheikh Mujib's 7 March speech at various public arenas. 'You may stop me if I am mistaken,' he said, 'but I am sure you will not stop me because I will not be mistaken.' To make himself clearer, he took from his pocket a clipping from the *Freedom Fighter* and showed me the small item on Nur Hussain which had my name as the byline.

'Would you like some tea?' I asked. 'It won't take more than two minutes.'

'No,' he replied, 'thank you; there is no time.'

It was a surprising invitation, because we thought only the street people knew us, people who did not know right from wrong, who were still under the illusion that Sheikh Mujib's voice heralded a new era and healed them from the inside out. Now we knew we had gone

www.pathagar.com

beyond the boundary of the slums and reached the minds of people who were powerful, who decided national executive policies, and were responsible for lots of people like us.

I had my reservations about the invitation. After Abdul Ali left, I was besieged with questions and doubt. Perhaps he looked down upon us. He could very well do that, as he was an MP's assistant. At this moment nothing could be more worthwhile than working for the Awami League. Then I wondered if we had angered the Awami League by delivering Sheikh Mujib's speech without their permission. What if he was instructed to invite us as naturally and calmly as possible so that we did not know some violent punishment was waiting for us at Moina Mia's residence?

I buried my fear. I did not want Nur Hussain to be affected by it. I was glad to see he took the invitation most easily, without thinking much about it. As long as I was with him, it was clear that he felt he had nothing to fear.

We went to see Moina Mia at his house which was several blocks away from our place. It was a house that stood alone. It had high boundary walls with wire barricades above. Builders were working on a new construction inside, which already had three storeys completed and would rise even higher. The wide and complicated, but aesthetically pleasing, wrought-iron gate and the image of a lion on the railings reflected the kind of people that lived there. Not many houses I had seen had such a distinguished combination of protection and theatricality.

Seeing us, Ruhul Amin, the gatekeeper, went inside and came out a moment later with Abdul Ali behind him. Abdul Ali advised him to take a close look at us so that he recognized us when we came next. Sounding as mechanical as yesterday, he told him we would be 'frequent visitors' there and should be given immediate access at any time of the day. Ruhul Amin saluted us; it seemed he had understood our importance before we ourselves did. 'Come on in,' he said, 'please.'

Moina Mia was in his Mujib coat. He was ready to receive us. He walked to the door and embraced Nur Hussain and shook my hand and led us to the sitting area. 'There you are,' he said, 'what an auspicious day.' Abdul Ali left the room, leaving us alone.

www.pathagar.com

I had seen him before. I guess I had seen him many many times, when he campaigned for the parliamentary election in early 1973. He was a veteran Awami League leader, and though he was not in Sheikh Mujib's cabinet, it was said he was 'close to him personally' and 'had advised him on various occasions about homeland security measures and enemy property affairs'. He had been in charge of recruiting freedom fighters for the war and was considered one of the most illustrious freedom fighters not to be adorned with medals—and that this was only because he was never part of the military. After the war he organized Sheikh Mujib's private militia, a tough, formidable, totalitarian-minded armed force, and helped him in his nationwide political campaign. It was he who arranged the massive reception ceremony for Sheikh Mujib when he returned from Pakistan in 1972. About 150,000 people gathered at Tejgaon Airport that day.

As the shopkeepers did in the market, Moina Mia addressed Nur Hussain as 'Sheikh Mujib', and asked him directly if he would be interested in working with him. The job involved, he explained, speaking to various crowds within the local constituency, something we were already doing. Nur Hussain would appear at the meeting spot well ahead of time and deliver the speech again and again to prepare the crowd for the main attraction of the day: Moina Mia's own speech. He was aware of the public displeasure I had seen across the city. He wanted to address it before it took a dangerous turn. Nur Hussain would help him do exactly that.

I intervened. 'Forgive me,' I said. 'Would you mind telling us a little more?' I asked if he would give us a hint of the fee. I did not want to sound mean, but Nur Hussain needed to know how much money he would earn from his speeches. He admired Sheikh Mujib as much as anybody else in the country, there was no doubt about that, but he had no other means to support himself than by delivering the speech. We were now going out almost every day, and we were not limited to one constituency. If we were to work for Moina Mia instead of what we were doing, we would have to know the monetary part of the proposal in detail.

No hint was necessary. Moina Mia smiled, as if he had expected this. There would be a deal between us, he said. 'A solid and

www.pathagar.com

transparent deal.' We would work sincerely and would be compensated sincerely. There was nothing to worry about. As long as Sheikh Mujib was leading the country, there would be no scarcity of money for any patriotic work. He had freed the country; he knew how to fight hardship. Bad times had arrived, but they would not stay long. The Awami League being in power meant all the people of the country were in power. They knew exactly how to take initiatives, proper and pragmatic initiatives, to build the country from its foundation up. Such initiatives would be taken in every constituency and Nur Hussain was an indispensable part of that effort.

Then he mentioned an amount. It was so huge compared to what we were earning in coins that I did not see the necessity of consulting Nur Hussain before giving consent.

'We are in,' I said promptly. 'We'll be waiting for specific directions regarding where to go, when to go, and what to say.'

Moina Mia slipped an envelope from the chest pocket of his coat. 'An advance,' he said. 'Just to buy two cups of tea to entertain yourself tonight. Just to buy two very good cups of tea.' The rest would follow. Even if there was no meeting to deliver the speech, he would not miss our payment.

The deal done, two servants, both of them of Nur Hussain's age but thinner, came in with tea and biscuits. They walked cautiously, served us silently, and then took a few steps back to stand at the corner of the room. Moina Mia noticed the deep surprise in their eyes as they watched Nur Hussain. He smiled and then whispered, 'This is a miracle. Tell me this is really happening. This is exactly what I needed. I don't have any doubt any more.' He looked at us with a smile on his lips. 'You say nothing,' he whispered to us. 'Just watch.' He added an extra direction for Nur Hussain. 'Watch and just be yourself. Don't worry, I am not testing you; I am testing them. I've already accepted you. Ready?' Nur Hussain looked at me and nodded.

'Basu and Gesu,' Moina Mia said, 'come here.' They took a few steps forward and stood there, keeping a respectable distance from us. 'What do you think you were doing standing there? I am very disappointed. Didn't I tell you not to look at my guests eye to eye?' Basu and Gesu began to tremble as he spoke. 'You only work for me;

www.pathagar.com

you're not my friends or my guests' friends, you know that?' They knew that completely. 'I can dismiss you right at this moment for this deplorable behaviour and also forfeit your salary this month.' They knew that too; probably it was a condition of their verbal agreement to work for him. 'But I forgive you this time because the prime minister of the country forgives you. Don't repeat this. Ever.'

It was a surprise for them. Perhaps they had wanted to meet Sheikh Mujib face to face from the very first day that they had heard his name. But under the constant commands of Moina Mia, they did not know how to show proper respect to him.

'Will you stand there like two fools or do something appropriate?' Moina Mia asked, giving no sign of controlling his anger. They fell to the ground instantly to touch Nur Hussain's feet. 'What did I teach you?' Moina Mia shouted. 'Do it properly. Three times every time; no concession.' They touched Nur Hussain's feet three times and touched their chests and remained on the floor for further commands. 'Since he is our bravest hero, you respect him again,' said Moina Mia. They touched Nur Hussain's feet three more times.

'They're not always like this, your honour understands that,' Moina Mia said to Nur Hussain. 'I am ashamed of their conduct today but I can assure you they are very loyal servants. They are not loud or greedy, and they do not disrespect anyone. Other servants may have issues with their masters; they may have their heads full of conspiracies to harm them, out of hate and jealousy; but these two are different. They know every moment what I want from them. They are very good servants, Mr Prime Minister; I hope you did not find them rude.' He gestured at Nur Hussain to touch their heads, which he did without hesitation. Basu and Gesu, still looking at the ground, stood up. Nur Hussain's touch was reassuring; they were less nervous now than before.

www.pathagar.com

15

My Rage and My Frustration

The development schemes the Sheikh Mujib administration had introduced were miserably inadequate. No strict mechanism was in place to determine if they worked or how fast they worked. This was because there were thugs everywhere, in every office, in every profession; thugs who had been freedom fighters but were now destroying the very concept of freedom. No specific policies were introduced to protect citizens against them. They came like bloodsucking Pakistani soldiers, looting and then disappearing. Then they came back again.

Whoever these thugs were, my anger was directed against Sheikh Mujib. And I was right. Because though the thugs came with different names, with different levels of power, they all came wearing the Mujib coat, and raising the *Joy Bangla* slogan. They all introduced themselves as his relatives, his dear friends, his dedicated supporters, who professed to sacrifice their lives for him. Then they looted. They attended his public speeches, worshipped him as the founder of the nation, and looted. They hung his picture in their offices, sitting rooms, bedrooms, waiting rooms, and looted as much as they wanted. And he knew everything. Still, he employed them, supported them, gave them power, shared his prayers with them, as if without them he could not exist.

Obviously, I could not share my anxieties with Nur Hussain. When we were in our respective rooms, I wanted him to come out and join me and say how his day had gone. That would give me an opportunity to ask how he thought his days could be better, how he felt about any specific political direction the country was taking and what he wanted to do about it. We would discuss the relation between politics and paranoia, exploring layer by layer the complex construction of social relationships in a new society. Freedom belonged

www.pathagar.com

equally to all citizens, yet some citizens alienated others so much that it was not really a society now; it was a primitive clan. We could spend hours and days interpreting our feelings.

But he never came. He went to bed early, slept all night snoring deeply, and woke up a happy man, ready to deliver the speech. He made the koi fish crispy when he cooked, the beef soft enough to open fibre by fibre when chewed, and ate a good amount of rice in every meal. When his hair grew after one and a half months and changed his appearance, he did not mind going to the hairdresser by himself after I had said I was not feeling well. He took his shirt, took money from the tin pot in the kitchen where we kept small amounts for everyday expenses and walked down the stairs humming a tune. Upon his return, he took long baths, the same tune growing and fading and growing again. On days when we had no speaking schedules, he borrowed my cassette player and played the speech repeatedly in his room. Though the sound barely came through the door, I knew he was honing his style, moving towards the highest level of perfection possible.

Although I knew nothing would come of it, I sat with him a few times. I had to try, if I was honest. If I began the conversation, I thought, he might come forth and express himself. With images and arguments I might make him confront his woes, his vulnerabilities, thus making him dream and reform his beliefs, attitudes, feelings and actions. He might not be able to understand instantly why pro-Awami League Bengalis were politically so submissive, but at least he would be able to see how Awami politicians had played with his and the rest of the country's sense of deprivation and dissatisfaction under the Mujib rule. Gradually he would understand that actions must be taken to challenge the status quo, to carry out a redemptive social movement. I sat with him and spoke and spoke and spoke, and he listened. Then when I stopped, drained and frustrated, he spoke about unrelated things, leaving me alone in my dark world. 'There is a cave there,' he said, 'a very dark cave, hidden behind the thorny trees of the Red Earth mountain. We were told that every once in a while the cave opened its mouth and pulled little children and grazing cattle into its wide stomach. We were never allowed to roam in that part of the village alone.' And another day: 'When we are out

www.pathagar.com

and see a black cat crossing the street before us, we return home. There is no way we take that street that day. That will bring us misfortunes, plagues. The problem deepens if the cat belongs to a widow or a lonely old woman. Then it has to be burned.' He spoke about Gangasagar, told me stories of fairies and demons and witches and monsters that he had heard in his childhood. Though he was in Dhaka now, and had been here for almost eight months, he had not taken the city to heart. He knew nothing of it.

I forgave him. How would he know what was in Sheikh Mujib's mind, or in my own mind? He came to the city for some kind of employment; he found some kind of employment. He did not care if that was the work he wanted to do for the rest of his life. The whole country did not exist for him as long as he remained alive.

www.pathagar.com

16

Danger at the Door

One of the conditions of working for Moina Mia was that he had absolute control over Nur Hussain's speaking schedules. The purpose of Nur's performances was to bring people under the umbrella of the Awami League. At no time should that agenda be undermined.

Though there was no need to speak at the market any more, as Moina Mia kept his monetary promises and paid us a generous fee for our services, I often noticed Nur Hussain felt like talking whenever the fishermen or the rickshaw-wallahs threw the *Joy Bangla* slogan at him. 'How is Sheikh Mujib doing today?' they asked him, and when he did not begin the speech, after I had given him a hard look, they asked if he was not in the mood; if he was suffering from stomach ache or constipation. 'All right, another day. Maybe when the wind falls and the mangoes ripen.' Then they would pass.

Many times he would start delivering the speech as we returned from one of Moina Mia's scheduled appearances. He would not look at me, thus very consciously and categorically avoiding me. He would look back to make sure no other rickshaw was following us, then say: *My brothers, I have come here before you today . . .* He would continue until he finished with: *I look back on the past twenty-three years, and I see nothing but a history of bloodshed.* Then he would repeat 'bloodshed' several times; every time the word turning softer and softer before getting lost between his lips. The rickshaw would continue moving, the rickshaw-wallah pedalling silently—probably he did not want to distract him—and we would sit next to each other, without talking, as if we were returning from a funeral. Then no noises on the road, no songs or familiar music coming from roadside stores, no neighbourhood policeman, postal officer, banker or teacher, whoever we met on our way, could push him out from his silence. He would sit as if he had lost the will to live and the material world did

www.pathagar.com

not have the ability to touch him again. Reaching home he would go to his room, I to mine. The night would pass in uninterrupted silence.

Sometimes he spoke at home. He would say a few paragraphs and then take a long, long, pause before speaking again. Did he fall asleep momentarily? Did he faint? I would run to see him. Then he would speak another paragraph or a few lines and lie down. Sometimes he spoke behind closed doors. I understood he was not sure what I might think of him. Well, I did not think anything. If I thought anything, I thought about the unfathomable fear I had in my mind that something bad would happen to us very soon and we would be undone. I could see it coming, coming speedily and dangerously, but I did not know how fatal it would be. Let it come. But before it came, and washed us away with its ruthless terror, let us live fully. So I gave him freedom in the flat.

Though I needed some quiet time for myself, and did not want to drag the moneymaking process up to my bed, I shrank my existence at home as much as possible. I wanted him to be happy with our way of life. I wanted him to be thankful that we met each other at such a critical moment of our lives. If he needed more space for himself, that was perfectly all right with me.

One day I advised him not to wear his Mujib coat when we went out to buy groceries or for evening walks or when we went to watch the neighbouring children play with small round marble stones on the street. 'Just for a few days,' I said. 'Maybe a few weeks, after which we'll evaluate the situation.' He would wear the coat, I said, only when we went to collect a crowd for Moina Mia. He did not ask why. He never asked questions. But I had to be frank with him. I needed to educate him so that I did not need to explain to him every little thing we might encounter every day.

There might be some wicked characters lurking in the crowd who had no common sense and did not appreciate what we were doing, I told him. Some people might behave badly simply because they had not been trained to be courteous when they were children. Some people might be insane or just rude to the world because they cared for nothing. Some of them might seek a different society because they believed in something that Sheikh Mujib found hard to endorse

www.pathagar.com

and fight for, for example, a country based singularly on the concept of the dictatorship of the proletariat advocated by the post-Leninist soviet leader, Leon Trotsky. Those belligerent hotheads, who could not be easily identified among the crowd, might get violent with us. They might want to stifle us whenever there was an opportunity. My fear was not baseless. Of late, people had become rather stubborn and inconsiderate. They would not concede favours to anyone, or for anything. Society as a whole was turning increasingly desperate and confrontational. Often there were fires in our neighbouring areas, in the market. Some of these incidents could be traced back to angry and mentally unstable individuals, a few of which were suicidal, but most of them remained a mystery. The mystery did not happen by chance, I told Nur Hussain; somebody must have been behind them, somebody who knew exactly what he was doing. That somebody could be anybody from the neighbourhood, from the tea stall, from the street corner or from the bus or even from the Friday prayers. A bank teller was arrested the other day on the high street. Allegedly, he was carrying a canister of kerosene and a matchbox. He was old and experienced, a respected man in the community, but he would not speak when asked about his intention. 'I am guilty,' he said. 'Do whatever you want to do with me; but remember: I will not be the last one to carry fire.' That was all he said.

There were confrontations among rickshaw-wallahs, some of them ending in serious physical assaults, blood on the dust, gouging of eyes, stabbings. Traders yelled at one another more frequently; there was no courtesy. The rules of fair competition were buried for good. Excessive price hike had its curses. Public properties were stolen or vandalized at a record rate. Households were burning with anger. One could not walk along the streets without being distracted by quarrels among agitated neighbours or siblings. Sometimes women's voices drowned the men's. I saw drunken women crawling on the road, their husbands yelling at them from the dark depths of their tiny houses.

On top of everything, an increasing number of anonymous artists were now going out every night with their paint rollers, brushes and aerosol cans to create graffiti of various sizes and colours on city walls, storefronts, abandoned vehicles and railway compartments,

www.pathagar.com

public buildings, monuments, construction fences, hospital boundaries, and high railings of bridges. They were hard-working people, I must admit. They had plans. In spite of the vigilance of the law and order authorities, they found their ways. One night they worked on the north side of the city, the following night they moved south.

Though the municipality cleaning squads removed the graffiti as soon as possible, some of it stayed on for days, or even weeks, spreading previously unheard of radical political messages among the public. Because its removal demanded many special and expensive arrangements, some graffiti was left completely untouched. 'Be Prepared to Die', one such graffiti on the railway route leading to Dhaka read, 'The Famine is Coming'. The artist had painted two skinny boys with big mouths and bloated bellies staring into the horizon, between the two warnings. A stencilled graffiti, which I saw only once—and which said, 'No Rice to Eat? Eat Awami League Leaders'—was on the General Post Office building. It was highly decorative, but it was removed within a day. Later I heard that the same graffiti had surfaced on many buildings at various locations in the city and the municipality gave up trying to remove it. They engaged their resources in removing graffiti that was larger in size and appearing in crowded, prominent areas.

During that time I came across many banknotes which were defaced with slogans like 'Leave Now', 'Prime Minister for Sale', 'Death to the Dictator', 'Who is this Person? What is He Doing in Our Country?' Some had Sheikh Mujib's eyes blinded with fountain pens; some showed him with bloody vampire teeth, some had his face crossed out. Some came with scribbles next to his portrait. 'What is the value of this banknote? Zero. Don't let Sheikh Mujib turn Bangladesh into a wasteland,' read a five-taka bill. The local grocer handed me a one-taka bill which was completely hidden behind its end-to-end scribbling. 'Believing in freedom is not a crime,' it read. 'But believing in Sheikh Mujib is. Because he does not stand for freedom. Not any more. Give me my country back. Give me my rifle back. God condemns the Awami League.' When scribbling on banknotes went out of control, the government forced the Central Bank's director to go to the media to declare that bills with such writings or stamps or additional signs would be considered

www.pathagar.com

invalid. In a press release the government also said possession of defaced banknotes might lead to arrest and imprisonment.

It was obvious a good number of individuals or underground organizations were out there who did not want to let the time pass by without a fight. I was sure they were not active only in the capital, but also in other cities and towns. They were doing what nationally circulated newspapers and magazines failed to do. Their intention might be to serve the people, but at the moment they were instigating the authorities against them. I did not want us to be the victims of that fight.

www.pathagar.com

17

An Enormous Campaign Begins

Winter was exceptionally cold that year. The temperature went down to 10 degrees, the lowest since record keeping began several decades ago. Scores of people died in the capital, in its shanty houses and slums. More people died in the countryside, especially in the northern districts where villagers lived in small bamboo huts and did not have sufficient warm clothes to wear. People died in December, January and February.

March 1974 saw better weather. Evenings, nights and mornings were not so cold now. Calves came out early in the morning and jumped in the yard. Chicken walked in the backyards and geese flew into the ponds without hesitation. Snakes ended their hibernation.

Still, people continued to die. They died in the south, where the lowest temperature recorded was 18 degrees Celsius. They died by the hundreds and thousands. They died every day, in every town, in every village, though Sheikh Mujib was far from admitting it.

In the city, more pavements were now covered with tents made of old saris. The saris soaked in the fog of the night and dried in the sun during the day and soon began to look colourless—as colourless as the faces of people that lived under them. Because of the lack of proper sewage facilities, the city air became sticky with bad smells. Blind people, people with elephantiasis, people wounded in the liberation war, people who were disabled or paralysed, found their stations on the road. In many areas, old and new refugees broke pipes to collect water. They cooked on the road, quarrelled among themselves, attacked one another, and torched one another's tents. Their sons learnt the art of picking pockets, breaking into stores, threatening one another with knives and hockey sticks, and assaulting anyone who came their way. Their daughters and wives lost all

www.pathagar.com

shame, learnt the language of the street, and gradually found it natural to invite strangers into their tents, desperate for some coins to buy food.

In April alone, Nur Hussain delivered Sheikh Mujib's 7 March speech a total of seventeen times. It was an extraordinary number, even by our standards. It seemed the more people died from starvation, the more Moina Mia needed to convince his constituents that we must not forget the enduring spirit that had made us free, that the crises of food would end soon and every family would be happy.

Most days we had to leave early in the morning for the venue set for Moina Mia's rally. We ate our breakfast there with the local Awami League activists. We cleaned the venue, raised banners depicting Sheikh Mujib, and mounted the stage before midday. From time to time Nur Hussain delivered a few sentences from the speech to test the microphone and to let the neighbourhood know a public meeting was planned there that day.

I did not have any experience of manual labour. As a result, I tired easily. I would take a nap sitting beside the piles of posters and leaflets behind the stage. It would mostly be a dark area, full of mosquitoes. The floor would be damp and even slippery. Sometimes I would see rats running from one end to the other, spreading smells of the sewage. One or two would stop next to my feet, seeking a little warmth. When I jerked my feet, they screeched and ran away. Sometimes I would wake up hearing the booming voice of Nur Hussain at the microphone. I envied his energy. His voice was always the same, clear and loud, as if he had just got up from sleep and uttered his first sentence of the day. Probably it was because of the microphone. He loved speaking into it. He freed it from the stand and walked around the stage, speaking. Sometimes he ran from end to end like a pop star and spoke in various acrobatic poses, providing the crowd with some extra entertainment. It was unnecessary, I thought. It was absolutely an exaggeration. Not part of our deal. He should not do it.

His impromptu physical acts happened before the actual meetings began, and definitely before Moina Mia arrived with a contingent of the militia. After his arrival everything would happen very fast. Nur Hussain would deliver a few lines from the 7 March speech. Awami

www.pathagar.com

League workers would chant *Joy Bangla* a few times. Then some moments of high tension, whispering, impatient waiting. From there Moina Mia would take the crowd on a tour through our history. He would begin in the style of a conversation, asking the crowd how they were doing that day; Awami League activists planted within the crowd would loudly respond they were doing excellently. Moina Mia would not pause long, in case some starving troublemakers got a chance to ask some embarrassing question. Every new day was a great day for the Bengali nation, he would say with satisfaction, because every new day was a day of freedom in the account of our lives. He would then relate how we fought against the British, how we resisted the Pakistani move to make us speak their language instead of our own, and finally how we had defeated them in 1971. 'Couldn't Sheikh Mujib, who created history by freeing his people from the yoke of slavery, also feed those people?' he would ask rhetorically. He could, Moina Mia would say, he would. 'Yes, yes,' the gathering would break out in a chorus. Sheikh Mujib would stand by his people, and no conspiracy—domestic or international—was going to change that. Moina Mia's favourite quotation came from Sheikh Mujib's 7 March speech. *I call upon you to turn every home into a fortress,* he would say in the voice of Sheikh Mujib, and then explain that the new fortress was to be against the food crisis while the fortress in 1971 was against our Pakistani enemies.

The purpose of those meetings was to communicate the very important fact that Sheikh Mujib was not sitting inactive in his palace oblivious to the conditions of our people; that he was not sleeping while the whole country suffered, as I thought he was. He was doing everything in his power to feed the hungry in the country. Diplomats were being sent to different corners of the world with his special message, seeking emergency food aid. The response had been extraordinary. A large number of containers had already arrived in the Chittagong port with readymade food; more were on their way. Once they were released, after official customs formalities, they would immediately be sent to every city and every village so that not a single Bengali suffered from starvation. In Mujib's country nobody would be allowed to die of hunger, Moina Mia would say decisively, even if nature was against us and brought us unmitigated droughts and cold for an unforeseeable period of time.

www.pathagar.com

At the height of his speech, he would ask the crowd if they believed in Sheikh Mujib. They answered in the affirmative. Then he would take a step forward and ask them again, saying he had not heard them; for some reason he was not hearing well that day. The crowd would now speak louder. 'We believe in Sheikh Mujib! We believe in him!' He repeated his question until the entire crowd raised its voice to the utmost, screaming that they believed in Sheikh Mujib's vision for the country, that they would give their lives to fulfil his dreams.

After the speech he would sit on a chair behind the stage, take a few deep breaths, and drink a glass of water. He would give specific directions about his next schedule. It was now time to ask about his performance. Who would he ask? Definitely Nur Hussain, with whom he seemed to have begun a competition. 'So what do you think?' he would say. 'Do you think my words have stayed in the hole in their hearts? Are they going to hate us a little less than they did yesterday?' He would laugh after that, though nobody else would.

www.pathagar.com

18

Dinner with Shah Abdul Karim

In May 1974, hundreds of refugees took over Mrittunjoyee Primary School in our neighbourhood. They occupied the school buildings, which had been devastated during the war and still lay in ruins. Those who did not fit inside the buildings pitched small tents in the field, against the boundary walls. They dug the ground to make temporary ovens and holes for toilets, made small canals to wash dishes and clothes, hung their ragged quilts from ropes before the tents, and reserved a corner of the field to dispose of their daily garbage. It was obvious they had just arrived from the villages. Their clothes were cleaner than those who had been living in the city for some time now. They lived a rather reserved life, as if trying hard to distance themselves from the world, from people who looked at them with curiosity and considered them extra trouble in a city that was already burdened with hundreds of thousands of refugees. They were still aware of the embarrassment they were in for. It was obvious they were lost, that they would not have moved to the capital were they able to support themselves in the villages.

One of the new refugees was Shah Abdul Karim. He was a sixty-year-old singer who played a yellow folk guitar ektara. I had heard him at night when I passed by the school field. I stopped on my way and stood still listening to his music. There was something in his voice that I could not ignore. Standing in the dark, close to the edge of the refugee camp, I had heard him sing how a terrible madness had come down from the sky and turned our dreams into pebbles. We could only look at them and collect them in our hands and burst into endless tears. We tried for an eternity but could not turn them into dreams again.

One day I saw him at the Shaheed Minar. He was singing before a gathering, jumping around inside a small circle, raising his guitar in

www.pathagar.com

the air. I went ahead and sat with the crowd. *All will die,* he sang under the yellow sun, *all that lives and suffers. There is no escape. Neighbours and friends, let us sit face to face, and be kind to each other. Lovely shadows, let us play, the night is near.* Then: *Everyone, everywhere. No place to hide, no God to pray to, no air that is soothing. My heart, I have not known it, is burning, falling to the dust in undisputed pains.* They were not long songs, but every time he finished a stanza he repeated the intro twice, and played the guitar for some time.

When the crowd clapped, he responded with some extra tunes. He smiled and stared at me. After that, he looked at me several times, I suppose. I clapped too, but under his gaze I felt numb. My hands became still. I felt he wanted to speak with me. And that he had a lot to say. So I stayed until after he had finished blessing the refugee children by touching their heads.

He had seen Nur Hussain and me when we were working at one of Moina Mia's meetings. He thought I would not come to hear him because he had no good news for Sheikh Mujib. I understood instantly what he meant. I told him, frankly, that I was living two lives. Though I was attending Moina Mia's programmes along with Nur Hussain, helping him reach his constituents as effectively as possible, I was in fact not a part of Sheikh Mujib's private militia or the Awami League's vote bank. I was selling my services to the Awami League in order to survive; that was all. There were specific conditions that had to be met for me to provide my services. When I thought those conditions no longer served my interest, I would withdraw or make a new deal with a new set of conditions.

He told me he had walked over three hundred miles in the last few months to sing for people. He had created many songs, but most of them were lost because he did not keep copies. Words came to his mouth and tunes came to his guitar. He was the medium that brought the two together. If it were not he, somebody else would, he said; the songs would have been sung, the music would have been created. On his way he had made friends with strangers, had lived in their huts, in their kitchens, and shared their last handful of rice. He had participated in many burial prayers too, watched many bodies placed in one grave, saw bodies rotting on the side of the road, in the

www.pathagar.com

water of the canal, bodies being eaten by dogs, bodies forsaken in deserted houses. Our neighbourhood was one of many such stops. When asked how long he would continue to walk, he smiled and began a tune on his guitar.

We went to Mrittunjoyee Primary School which he called home. He did not have a tent there. He lived on the veranda of the school building. There were many around who have had to accept the same fate. It was not a place to live for a human being, and definitely not a place where someone could invite guests, but he would invite me, he said. We sat together, a yard apart, watched the refugees who cooked in the field, their children playing in the dust, young ones crawling, moving in any direction they liked, eating mud, cow dung, guava seeds, sundried banana peels. A few yards away a woman of eighty was caning her fifty-year-old son. He had assaulted his wife when she had refused to go look for work. The wife wept sitting on the dust. She said she had looked for work day after day, but did not find any; she had offered to work the first day free for the second day's payment; that was also not enough. Now she was showing her mother-in-law the bruises on her knees.

Abdul Karim said he wanted to continue singing as long as he lived. An entire life devoted to music would not convey the sorrows he had seen—so deep were they. He had seen death in all its possible shapes and colours. One did not need to walk three hundred miles to see death, he said; death was at our doorstep, happening every day, exposing itself concretely to the elements. He walked because he could not stop walking. The more deaths he witnessed, the more pressure he felt to move on. If nature would teach him how to overcome the thought of self-annihilation, he could stop somewhere. Unfortunately it did not. He gave me some peanuts from his bag and threw some at the children, who tumbled upon them. Those were a gift from an admirer from the market, he said. The admirer regularly offered him something.

What one was going to eat for supper was the most awkward question at the time. It was more deeply personal than the question of faith. I did not want to embarrass him. If he would be kind enough to give me company for an hour, I said, I was going to eat something in the restaurant before going home. Of course if he was not busy; I did not know if he had other engagements.

www.pathagar.com

He was not busy, but he must return at sunset to sing for them—he pointed at the tents. 'Good people,' he said, 'very good people; sadly enough, many of them won't survive another evening to listen to my music. Their souls will fly to a world fairer than the one we live in, so tomorrow is always a better day than today.'

We walked to the restaurant where we sat in one of the front tables. I ordered parata roti and bhaji with tea for both of us. There were not many customers at that time, so we got our food pretty quickly. As we ate, I told him I had been a journalist and had worked with the *Freedom Fighter* for over two years. He had never seen it or heard of it. So I gave him a brief description: when it began, who the editor was, its role during the war, and why it thrived so well compared with other journals of the day. I told him one day I would have my own paper, which I would call the *New Sun*. I would write in it whatever I believed the times demanded. I would be its editor; I would change the job description of an editor so that no editor could become rude and inert. I would talk about how life was now, the real life, from the very first issue. I would recreate it as it had been for a long time; I would recreate it in all its ironies, pitfalls, pretensions and sensations. I was keeping notes of everything that I thought and everything that I saw, I said to him, and in that paper I would print them all in a very straightforward language. I would not wait for history to judge. If I waited, it would be too late. I would use my own judgement. How could we disregard something that was so obvious? I would say it was the fault of Sheikh Mujib, who did not see people dying, because he did not want to accept that death would exist in Bangladesh as long as he led the government.

I could go on and on and on, but I just wanted to give Abdul Karim an idea of the intense fury I carried in my heart. I did not want my country to be ruled by a morally bankrupt fascist force like the Awami League. By working for Moina Mia I was saving money for that purpose, I told him finally. Once I had enough money to print a four-page newspaper, even if only once a month, I would not stay idle for a day. 'Believe you me,' I said to him. 'I am not kidding. This is the single most important thing I am aspiring to accomplish.'

He still looked hungry, after eating his second parata. So I ordered one more for each of us. He ate and then burped several times—an indication he had enjoyed the meal.

www.pathagar.com

'I feel so good now,' he said in the end. 'As if I have become innocent again.' He burped noisily. 'Ah, what a feeling! I need to sleep.' He smiled.

'Sure.' We both stood up. 'Please go ahead.'

'Don't forget to stop by.' He looked back from the door as I paid the bill. 'You know where to find me.'

I nodded.

After Abdul Karim had returned to the school, I walked down the street. At the crossing I saw a woman sitting with a little boy lying like dead before her. She was weeping inside her veil. Rickshaw-wallahs passed before her, pedestrians passed, looking at her indignantly.

I had seen her many times before. I had seen her in various places—in front of the mosque, at the market, at the mouth of the refugee camp, at the bus stop, under the flyover, at the yard of the local two-storey Hindu temple. She always wept with the same sadness. Every time I saw her, she had the boy before her. Though I knew he was not dead but only pretending, I gave her a coin and left without question.

At night I spoke to Nur Hussain. I told him it was my great desire that we invite Abdul Karim to live with us. 'He is a harmless person, as harmless as a singer could be,' I told him. 'He will eat whatever food we have and sleep in the living room. Since he is a wanderer, he does not have any luggage; just a small bag that we won't even notice. If he lives with the refugees, he will not survive for long. It will be a mistake to let such a visionary person perish. What do you say?'

Nur Hussain remained silent, which angered me. He could remain silent even in the face of the worst atrocities happening in front of him—such an ignorant, mean, worthless person. Simply irritating. Our country desperately needs people like Abdul Karim—doesn't he see it? Soon there will be nobody around to give us higher knowledge. For its regeneration a nation actually needs knowledge that is not useful, rather than knowledge that is useful. A nation needs to get back its own heart. Only people like Shah Abdul Karim could bring it back to us.

www.pathagar.com

It was useless to consult him, not only about the singer, about anything, important or unimportant. He would choose silence over words, as if he never spoke. He would look into my face, as if I would not have asked the question if I had not had it answered already.

He did not care.

He had no feelings.

www.pathagar.com

19

A Guest in the House

Abdul Karim loved sleeping on the couch, leaving his bag and the guitar next to his pillow. He relished the tea that Nur Hussain or I made in the morning and ate with great appetite every item of food we put on his plate. We would leave him at the flat when we went to work for Moina Mia. Upon our return, we would find the flat clean and tidy. He wanted to prove his appreciation by providing small services to us. I would turn to Nur Hussain and say, 'See, I told you. He's a person with a conscience. He knows how to be courteous. How many people of this stature do you see around here, and how many of them are as humble as he is?'

Frequently he entertained us with new songs. In one he said: *How shall we escape the claws of misfortune? The snake is there, waiting; and the rhinoceros, its rocky mouth eager to strike.* And in another: *What evil is this? The heart, stiff, and memory, mechanical, the ceremony of formal feeling is over; what continues is eternity with its great pain.* He had an outstanding ability to create serious songs with very ordinary words. In his voice those ordinary words became musical; they came out of the gloom that we had imposed upon them due to the sad life around us and became beautiful. He played the guitar with one hand, while with the other he slapped his forehead, sometimes also hit his chest, as if by torturing himself he might evaporate the expanse of sorrows inside him. A few times he woke up early and left the flat for the refugee camp, to see his new friends there, to sing for them under the morning sky. By singing and talking he was able to erase much of the dismal mood of the day. He forgot to return home at night; he returned only when we went to look for him. He saw us and instantly remembered he was living with us. We could tell by looking at his face he had not eaten the whole day. That his friends always fed him was a lie. At home we would give him

www.pathagar.com

food, and then he would take up his guitar to sing for us out of gratitude. Nur Hussain or I would take the guitar away and prepare the sofa for him. 'You are tired,' we would say. He would fall asleep within minutes.

Obviously, Nur Hussain and I did not speak to each other a lot. I should say, we did not speak much outside of our business needs or small everyday matters. He knew his job and I knew mine. We trusted each other so much that only silent physical presence was sufficient for our communication. But he spoke a lot with Abdul Karim, and I guess he also bonded deeply with him within a short time. Together they ate food and then drank tea sitting in the living room. They went out together; from the window I could see them walk side by side, talking, stopping to look at each other. I would see them until they were lost behind the walls or the trees. At night sometimes Abdul Karim started a song, and when he came back to the intro, Nur Hussain added his voice. He swung his head while following the notes of the songs. The songs seemed to pierce his heart.

I guess Shah Abdul Karim gave him what I could not. He gave him ease and friendship. He made Nur feel at home in my home. By contrast, I crushed him under the obscene necessities of life. I reduced him into a shiny coin on which I also engraved my own portrait. He was mine, I thought. His energy was mine. His words, his silence were mine. His future was mine. It was my future now. He had nothing for himself. He would be mine, the same stuff, the same creature, the same nothingness, as long as I needed him. Probably that was not what he had expected when he came here. Probably he was at a loss with me, and he did not know how to get out. If he knew how to get out, he would not have come to me in the first place. All these things made him silent around me. At the same time I also did not know what else to do, what else a person could do at such moments.

I had lost much of my self-respect. If there was an accident in Moina Mia's meeting, say an explosion, and I got killed, newspapers in the country would print features on how a journalist ended up accumulating wealth from the most destitute in society. They would print my picture with a caption: 'The most unpredictable end of a very predictable man.' That was not what I had thought my life

www.pathagar.com

would be like. I had never thought that one day I would have to accept myself in such a pitiful condition.

What was happening to me?—I asked myself this when Nur Hussain was not around. I sat before the window and thought how rude and impolite I was to him. It was almost indecent. My responsibility was to give him courage, to inspire him, to make a better human being of him, or at least to try to make him explore his potential so that he could decide his own goals. In times of such crisis we needed to cultivate human virtues with more perseverance than ever; we needed compassion and generosity. Instead, I seemed resolved to do the opposite.

Abdul Karim lived with us for only three weeks. He behaved strangely in his last few days. He began cooking for us, gave us some beautiful advice about everyday life, as though he was our father, who had just rediscovered his role after an early retirement.

'Do not burden yourself with problems that you do not understand,' he said. 'If you do, then only the problems win. Human life becomes a tragedy.' Or this one: 'No man is more of a stranger to you than you are to him. Receive him with trust.' Or even this one, which he said taking us by the arms: 'Look beyond your self-importance and pain. You will know yourself better.'

I could not stop myself from asking him about Sheikh Mujib. But he said: 'Love or hate for Sheikh Mujib will not end this. Who is Sheikh Mujib? Is he imperishable? Can he tell when seeds will wake up, and the sky will shine? The answer to hunger is in our hearts, not in the food. It is not in politics; but in our feeling, divinity, in the very essence that makes us human. Our hearts have to cry to end our tears. Our minds have to be free to end this suffering.'

I understood there was a sphere beyond politics and famine where he lived as a man free from illusions. When he sang, he came down from that sphere, became an everyman, soiled his feet, and crawled in the dirt willingly, after which he raised himself again to his ideal dwelling place. There was no government in that sphere. It was not cluttered with human complaints and sighs.

One day he got up early in the morning, drank tea with us, gathered his bag and guitar, and sang one last song, before stepping out. 'I'm leaving,' he said. 'Don't look for me.' That was all.

www.pathagar.com

20

You Give Me Good Money, I Give You Good Publicity

Moina Mia told us one evening that Sheikh Mujib was not satisfied with the way the Awami League was handling the party's publicity. It was not that the Awami League could not define itself in the post-liberation period, or that it did not know what to do with the liberated country after fighting to liberate it. The Awami League had always been the Awami League—an up-to-date political party with a clear vision and objectives. In fact, it had recently taken on a long-term key project called 'Bread, Water and Electricity', which was going to play an extraordinary role in the party's rejuvenation. A group of wise men from within the party had already been selected to execute it. However, the party's traditional publicity tactics were ineffective in conveying its message in these new times. As a result, it was facing a potential danger.

The responsibility of helping the party grow, and of keeping its popularity alive, lay, first, with the central leaders, then, in descending order, with the regional leaders, the local leaders, and, finally, and most importantly, at the microcosmic level, with individuals like us who worked directly with the people. We needed to serve the party's interest more aggressively and, if necessary, invest more time into it. Moina Mia believed that we needed to find a way to engage and convince a particular section of the populace so that it did not get the opportunity to damage 'our unity' and harm our nation with its 'anti-people agenda'. 'Nothing is wrong with the country,' Moina Mia said with emphasis, 'but Sheikh Mujib is losing popularity among the people because of these naysayers. They are tainting his name by saying that he is not relevant to our future. They say this because he fought to liberate the country while they opposed liberation, and

www.pathagar.com

because they want to plunder us and control our lives. They say food aid is not distributed properly, though all aid is evenly distributed, to the last grain. They are torturing people in the villages to force them to relocate to the capital in order to humiliate the government. By showing the world that our capital has an ugly face they want to prove that we have failed in our mission.'

His voice rose further as he moved on. 'What about the floods?' he asked. 'Did Sheikh Mujib hit the clouds in the sky so that rain came pouring, causing the rivers to overflow? Did he make this summer hot, hotter than all previous summers, so that the crops dried before the harvest was ready? Certain people will actually believe all this. Certain people who admire these heinous conspirators will never accept Bangladesh as a stable nation—not even fifty years after our independence.'

He looked at Nur Hussain's Mujib coat and became upset. 'The coat does not look black,' he said. 'It does not look *pure* black. Have you overused it? Nothing is really useful if it is not pure. Let me give you an example. What do you feel sitting before a colourless sunset—excited? It is not to be seriously admired, is it? If an Awami League representative does not know how to keep his clothes in order, how will people think his party will be able to keep order in the country? We have to be more cautious about everything we do; especially about small details, like wearing a coat, keeping shoes shiny, hanging the portrait of Sheikh Mujib in a spotless and expensive mahogany frame, choosing an effective typographic style for banners, choosing images with warm colours for the posters. These are things that are easily overlooked, though they create the first impression.'

He asked how many coats Nur Hussain had. We said, why, one, was that a problem? 'Only one?' He could not believe us. We must buy half a dozen immediately, he said, if possible that day, so that if one was damaged or discoloured or lost, Nur Hussain had another ready to wear to work.

'It is his voice that is important, not the coat,' I said resolutely. I did not hesitate to argue, as I felt a little bit embarrassed by his interrogation. 'It is the way he delivers the speech. Everybody can buy a coat, if there is money; but hundreds and thousands of beautiful coats will not make anyone serve the Awami League the way Nur

www.pathagar.com

Hussain does.' I looked at Nur Hussain for support. He was as lifeless as a yellowed picture in a frame. 'Besides,' I said, 'coats are worn over the punjabi; they are meant to be discoloured, aren't they? There is the sun. There is humidity. And a world of dust out there. They cannot glisten all the time, can they?'

He got my point and brought out some money from the soft interior of his pocket and handed it to me. 'The purpose of having money is not saving it. It is to complete a job efficiently.' He asked if we understood what he had just said. We nodded. 'Good. Also buy a pair of punjabis. A new coat without a new punjabi is meaningless. It means we respect neither the coat nor the punjabi.'

www.pathagar.com

21

The Newcomers

A new wave of refugees came to the city in September 1974. Coming to the city was probably the worst thing they could do. In the villages they could collect herbs, catch a bird in the fields, steal eggs from turtles, and uproot a banana tree to extract its white skeleton. There were hundreds of thousands of canals and ponds full of fish. These opportunities were not available in the cities. Still they came.

What pushed them to set out for Dhaka in that critical moment of our national history, I asked myself once again, if it wasn't a conspiracy of Pakistani collaborators, as Moina Mia had said? I came up with several answers. First, they were not landowners. These people were rootless, so it was easy for them to decide to set out for a new place. They had nothing to lose. Second, they were not going anywhere. They were just wandering the way they had wandered year after year, generation after generation, before the liberation as well as after it. And in the course of that wandering they found themselves in Dhaka, which happened to be the capital of the country. Third, they were scared of seeing more death. Death came every day. They looked for the most densely populated area in the country. They thought they would be able to hide themselves amidst Dhaka's crowds, and death would not find them. Fourth, they did not want to just die meaninglessly; they did not want to be shadows of lives without enjoying the promises of the new country. They had lived year after year in slavery, burdened by discrimination and shame. Now they were free. If they could survive a few more days, they might be able to live with honour. By going from place to place they wanted to buy time.

I revised my answers, again and again, until I believed I knew exactly why the refugees chose to come to Dhaka. If it were other refugees at any other time, I would not have used the same arguments.

www.pathagar.com

I was sure those refugees got on the road to Dhaka one morning compelled by a higher cause.

They wanted to get as close as they could to Sheikh Mujib. That was it, I thought; definitely. That was why they were here. He was their man. They wanted to draw his attention to their sufferings. What better way was there to do that than coming to the capital, being his neighbour, burying the dead at his doorstep, bowing down before him and saying with unshakeable promise that even after thousands of deaths they would not lose confidence in him? He was not going to go see them in their villages. They had waited and waited and seen death after death; he did not come. He did not come even though he had promised in his speeches to look after them. So they came to him.

I saluted them. They were strong people. They had made it this far through the famine. Soon they would be at his house; they would be his uninvited guests and speak their minds, calling for his attention.

If I lived in a village and the famine had hit, I asked myself, would I have the courage to come to Dhaka as they did? Would I dare cross those drought-stricken miles and raise a tent next to a burial ground under the open sky, knowing that one day after my death from acute starvation I would be buried by strangers in a strange place, or left at a street corner to be eaten by dogs and vultures? Would I be able to think clearly about such a long and critical journey? Would I do something else entirely, like killing people who stood in my way, who hid food in their backyards and did not sell their wares because they wanted a price hike? Good that I was alone, no children or elderly relatives with me; good that I had no parents to look after. If I had, I would have left them behind. I would have snatched their food to feed myself. Every life has a duty to live, you know; every life is precious but at this moment my life is more precious than yours—that was what I would have argued. It would have been reprehensible.

I felt exhausted. Whenever I asked myself these questions, I felt exhausted. I struggled for a breath of air. I struggled to look normal, to appear to Nur Hussain like I was perfectly fine, I was fit to accompany him to Moina Mia's gathering, though I knew in my mind I was falling into an endless abyss.

In 1974 alone over one and a half million people died in Sheikh

www.pathagar.com

Mujib's liberated Bangladesh. How big was that number? Five times the number of Bangladeshis killed by Pakistani forces during the entire period of the liberation war in 1971. No natural disaster had claimed so many lives since the beginning of our national calendar. No ruthless tribal landlord or maharaja in our history had been the cause of so many deaths in the subcontinent. No religious clash, territorial disagreement, or deadly disease subjected our people to helplessly witness the untimely decline of such an astronomical number of lives.

www.pathagar.com

22

A Coat for All

Abdul Ali was waiting for us at our door. There was no chair or stool in the passage, so he must have been standing the whole time. 'Where have you been so long?' he asked, almost angrily, as soon as he saw us climb up the stairs. He had come to call us to an urgent meeting with Moina Mia; it was a meeting we mustn't miss, he said.

As we followed him silently, he drew our attention to his Mujib coat. How did he look, he asked; did he look like a real supporter of Sheikh Mujib? He told us that because of a step taken by Moina Mia recently to strengthen public support for Sheikh Mujib, from now on he would have to wear a coat, gatekeeper Ruhul Amin would have to wear one, and Basu and Gesu would have to wear coats as well. Moina Mia's initiative did not end there, he said. Though it was not election time, new measures were taken to raise huge wooden boats—the insignia of the Awami League—in the market, at important intersections, at the gates of the refugee camps, and at other significant public venues. There would be at least sixteen boats across the constituency; and the first one would be raised over the gate of Moina Mia's residence.

I could not tell if he looked like a *real* supporter of Sheikh Mujib or not, I said, but I could tell for sure he looked interesting. 'What do you mean by *interesting*?' he asked immediately, sounding concerned. 'Are you trying to insult me?' He stopped, refused to walk further until I had explained myself. His expression of delight was ruined, and I imagined I had caused him immeasurable trouble with my comment. Where this trouble came from, I could also guess. He should not worry, I said softly; if Moina Mia knew what a person would feel in a coat, when wearing that coat was compulsory, he would not have imposed it in the first place. He wanted to arrange a pageant, with hundreds of people across the constituency wearing

www.pathagar.com

the coat. His purpose would be served. He could boast to the Awami League council that he had gone beyond the traditional way of popularizing the party; he had made an extra effort to protect Sheikh Mujib's legacy. Nobody would bother to read what was written in the hearts of those wearing the coat. They might be real supporters, but if they were not it did not matter. Abdul Ali could look like a monkey in that coat, or a crow without a tail, but to Moina Mia he would still be a loyal colleague, a valuable fighter for Sheikh Mujib, an indispensable element of his pageantry.

'Do I look like a monkey in the coat?' Abdul Ali asked, as he took the first step onward. 'Do I really look like a crow, so ugly?'

I asked Nur Hussain what he thought. 'Why don't *you* answer him?' I said. 'After all it is not a meaningless question.'

He said, 'Protect your heart. Forget the rest.'

Did he learn that from Shah Abdul Karim, I wondered.

Abdul Ali took a moment to understand Nur's words. Then he smiled. 'I don't know,' he said, 'and I don't care, as long as my employer considers me *real*.'

Gatekeeper Ruhul Amin gave us a salaam with his regular indifference and opened the small door in the gate. Unlike Abdul Ali, he was always quiet and reserved; but today he seemed frighteningly quiet. He did not like to wear his coat, Abdul Ali whispered with a smile, as if he was still enjoying my comment. 'See, he has already lost one of the middle buttons. Come after a week, you'll find he has eaten up the whole thing.' He led us to Moina Mia's sitting room. Soon Basu entered with Arabian dates and chocolate biscuits on a tray while Gesu followed him with a pot of tea and teacups. They served us courteously, as always, and then stood aside waiting for Moina Mia's gesture. It was obvious they felt uneasy in their coats, but when Moina Mia drew our attention to them, they stood side by side, soldiers before their commander. 'Slogan,' he said. One of them said a long *Joy Bangla*, and the other replied with a similarly long *Joy Sheikh Mujib*. They uttered the slogan three times before being dismissed. Abdul Ali followed them.

In the quiet room Moina Mia looked at the portrait of Sheikh Mujib on the wall again and again as he sipped the tea noisily. Sitting

www.pathagar.com

before us, he looked at his shoulder, his arms, his chest, then caressed the back of his left hand softly. Then he coughed, prepared himself to speak, but failed to come out of his reverie. There was anger in him, or an unbound tension, under which he felt suffocated. He lit a cigarette, went to the window and smoked rapidly, while playing absent-mindedly with the window curtain. Looking back, he gestured at us to eat the biscuits. 'Today I double your fee,' he said, as he settled down. Then a little later, after getting no response from us: 'No, I treble it. You have done a good job; you will continue to do a good job. If you deserve a better fee, I should be prepared to offer you a better fee.' He returned to sit back on the sofa. 'I cannot be unreasonable with people whom I need badly, and as people whom I need badly, you too should not behave unreasonably with me, not even in uncertain situations. What do you say?'

'No,' I said. 'Unreasonableness will not benefit either of us. And that is not what we are here for.'

The reason for his extreme generosity was as follows. Sheikh Mujib had expressed a serious desire to meet Nur Hussain. He was aware that there was someone in the country who could deliver his speech with due passion and inspiration. Would Nur Hussain be kind enough to accept the invitation of the prime minister to see him at his residence as soon as possible?

I looked at Nur Hussain; first, to be sure he had heard exactly what I had heard, and second, to observe his reaction to what had just been said. If it were in our flat, and only in the company of Abdul Ali, I would have jumped for joy. I would have pulled him off the sofa, made him dance with me. But he kept his usual silence, as if he had no clue who Sheikh Mujib was, or even if he had, he did not think such an invitation would be unexpected. Whatever the reason, I appreciated his silence. Here was a man made of stone. He wanted me to decide for him, to understand the pros and the cons and to act accordingly. All negotiations were mine; he was only a speaker and did not want to complicate his role by getting involved in superior intellectual matters like decision-making, management and negotiation.

Immediately it became clear to me why Moina Mia had wanted to increase our fee before we even asked for a raise. He could no longer

www.pathagar.com

neglect us—now that we had come to the attention of his leader. He was clever. He had not become an MP for nothing. His head was full of ideas.

Personally I felt great. When we were visiting local markets, in the beginning, I was not sure where we were going and how long we would be able to continue. Working for Moina Mia saved us. Now it was time to think big. It was time to plan again, to utilize every opportunity without fear. I could not wait to smell the new money, to clasp it in both my hands.

www.pathagar.com

23

My First Coat

The date of our meeting with Sheikh Mujib was within the week. No formal preparation was necessary, we were told, except that our clothes should be clean and odourless. Sheikh Mujib hated smells, any smell but tobacco. Hadn't we seen his pipe? We were also told we would be escorted from our home by members of the private militia. We would go in their official cars. They would carry guns so we did not need to carry ours if we had saved any from the liberation war. It would be a short private meeting, and would be held at his residence in the Dhanmondi Residential Area.

Moina Mia did not say that I needed to wear a Mujib coat to see Sheikh Mujib. He was aware I never wore one. Probably he could not decide what I was, exactly. I was definitely an Awami League supporter, he must have thought; a Bangladeshi could be either an Awami League supporter or a collaborator of Pakistan. Since I was not a collaborator, I must have been an Awami League supporter. He did not know if I was only an ordinary supporter or an active supporter. Perhaps he did. We never spoke about it. Maybe he did not want a coat to come between us. That was why he left the matter of the coat absolutely to my discretion.

I was a journalist, not a party official. A journalist does not need to have a good coat, or a specific coat, I believed. I had no coat when I covered the liberation war. It is better that journalists never wear any party outfit in our country, not even after they have retired. That will bring them some respect. But I was not going to see Sheikh Mujib as a journalist. I was going to see him as a civilian along with two other civilians. Since both Moina Mia and Nur Hussain were going to wear their coats, I thought it would not hurt if I had one on as well.

I bought myself a white punjabi from the high street, and a Mujib

www.pathagar.com

coat—my first. I did not have to go to the tailor to make one. Ready-to-wear ones had come into the market by that time. I told the seller to pack the clothes in paper. I suppose I was too shy to carry them in my hand. I suspected pedestrians would know exactly what I was carrying. At the same time I was feeling guilty, thinking I was exaggerating the significance of the coat. The seller asked if he should put it in a special gift package. I felt relieved. 'Please go ahead,' I said immediately. 'Thank you.' He took an eighteen-by-twelve-inch envelope with a photo of Sheikh Mujib on it and placed both the punjabi and the coat inside delicately, as if they were precious, fragile items. That made me nervous again. I did not want to carry a Mujib coat in my hands; now I would have to carry Sheikh Mujib himself. I did not want to cause a fuss either, as I definitely did not want to give the seller a clear picture of all that I had on my mind. I took the package, walked out of the door, squeezed it into a small roll and pressed it close to my stomach, before taking the most deserted street back to the flat.

I took a long bath, shaved myself carefully and ate some rice. I made myself some fresh tea after finding Nur Hussain already asleep. I could not finish the tea. It tasted like rotten juice. I washed the teacup in tap water and then poured hot water in it, before checking if it still smelt rotten. I dried it with a napkin and hung it from the nail on the wooden board. Then I paced obsessively across the room.

As the evening passed, I felt somewhat more in control and collected. I put on my undershirt, unrolled the punjabi and the coat and swiftly put them on. It was just for a few seconds, I said to myself; I smelt something on the coat, something I remembered I had smelt at a burial prayer or in the refugee camp amidst the disenchanted crowds. I looked around. Everything in the room was clean. There was nothing in the garbage bin giving off a bad smell. The bed sheets had been recently washed. The quilt was new, though not as new as the punjabi. Something was wrong. Something was terribly wrong. I took off the coat and threw it on the floor and ran to the window, desperately gasping for a whiff of fresh air.

I passed the night vomiting several times, waking, sleeping about an hour or two, and then waking again. I pissed several times. Looking at the punjabi I said to myself: *No way, no way am I going*

www.pathagar.com

to wear that trouble, not even if I have to go to prison for three months. I cannot tarnish my character by embracing it. Not until I have gone mad and my heart has collapsed. There was a serious difference between us, between Nur Hussain and me. While he could accept everything easily, I could not. He came to the city easily, stayed with me easily, and started delivering the speech easily. He wore the Mujib coat without hesitation or argument. In contrast, I had reservations. Sometimes I could not do even what I had accepted in principle. I felt oppressed by that little piece of cloth because I had defined it. The whole personality of Sheikh Mujib could well be expressed in that one piece of cloth, I said to myself. People who did not know what our national flag looked like, because it had undergone a few changes, knew unmistakably what a Mujib coat was. I pushed the coat to the pile of things I least liked and went to sleep.

It was late morning when I woke. Nur Hussain was not in his room. I was actually happy to find him not in. The flat was mine now. I could allow myself to be a bit crazy. If I wore the coat, nobody would see me. I took a quick bath. Having a bath before wearing the Mujib coat was customary practice, I believed. One had to be clean to maintain the solemnity of such a coat. Then I picked up the coat in my hand. I must feel comfortable in it at least for a few hours, if not for a day, I said to myself. I could not fail where millions of others had succeeded. I would wear that coat, I said to myself. I would wear it for my own sake, not in honour of Sheikh Mujib—no matter what everyone else, including Sheikh Mujib, thought. I would wear it to escape my fear of wearing it, just to tell myself I was free to wear whatever I wanted to but I chose to wear that coat. I would wear a piece of cloth as a piece of cloth, not as an idea.

I opened out the coat. No smell came this time. The black cloth shone in the morning light. My eyelids fluttered. I took it closer to my nose. Still no smell. How wonderful! I kissed it softly, held it to my chest for some time and then left it on the bed while I put on the punjabi. I buttoned it properly at the neck. The sleeves were longer than my arms; so I folded them up to my wrists. The creases that the punjabi had from the factory were hard and exposed. I pressed them to my body and smoothed them somewhat, especially the ones at my chest and stomach. Then I wore the coat over the punjabi. It gave me

www.pathagar.com

a handsome sort of definition. Walking around, I tried to identify every little discomfort I might feel from my new attire. I did not find any. I walked slow and fast, raised my hands in front, then over my head, bent forward and backward. It was a perfect coat. The standard size was probably my size. I folded newspapers and rearranged what little furniture I had in the flat. I wanted to get used to the coat so that I did not feel too awkward in the company of Sheikh Mujib. When I looked at myself in the mirror, I could not think of the famine; I have survived, I said to myself. I have survived when thousands of my countrymen could not. I was not crying; nor had I gone mad. I had not vandalized anyone else's property to keep myself alive. I looked at my eyes, my hair, my chin; I looked like a fighter, a true fighter. I moved forward and backward and watched myself in the mirror again and again. I posed, raising my right hand towards the horizon, as Sheikh Mujib or even Nur Hussain did. Then I uttered, *My brothers . . . this is the struggle for our independence; this is the struggle for our freedom. Joy Bangla.* I could hear my voice coming back to me at the speed of a cyclone. The words echoed in the room, in my heart, and then moved out through the window, got mixed with the air, and spread through the world with a strong, unavoidable resonance.

I thanked myself for buying that coat. I thanked Moina Mia for hiring us, and Sheikh Mujib's adviser for fixing us a meeting with him—he must be one of the keenest people in the administration, someone who knew how to resurrect people from their dead beliefs—and Sheikh Mujib, for being considerate enough to grant us a meeting. I thanked Nur Hussain for coming from the remote village to see me, for being so faithful and accommodating. I thanked Raihan Talukder for sending him to me. I had not done anything for him, but he had done me a big favour by sending the boy to me. I thanked Lutfuzzaman Babul for assigning me to write an article on sepoy Mostafa Kamal, without which I would have never been to Gangasagar and nothing that followed, or was going to follow, would have happened. Finally, I thanked myself again for trying what I did not like. I felt that no Bengali would ever be a true Bengali unless he wore the Mujib coat at least once in his life.

Nur Hussain soon returned. He looked tired and worried. I did

www.pathagar.com

not care. Why should I? We had an appointment with Sheikh Mujib and we had to respect it. We had to present ourselves at our best. We could not be preoccupied by individual emotions.

'Didn't I tell you not to go out alone?' I shouted at him. 'What if some anarchists stabbed you on the road? It may well happen in daylight, steps away from our door. Haven't you seen the ugly graffiti on the wall?'

He saw me in the coat but did not say a word. Nothing mattered to him, I thought, as he went to his room. How arrogant he was, his silence a form of violence. He would not look at me even when I stood at his door. He lay down on the bed, his face hidden in the pillow. He would not look at me because he was jealous of me. He thought the Mujib coat was his and his alone. He was wrong.

www.pathagar.com

24

In Anticipation of the Meeting

I did not know what to expect from our meeting with Sheikh Mujib. I had never spoken with people who had met him personally, had never been able to ask if they found in him the qualities they had expected of him.

As a people we believed we knew our leader fully, but to me, Sheikh Mujib was a mysterious man. In fact, he was a riddle. Born in a small village, he found out as a child he would not be able to go to school for the next four years because of his eye surgery. He got married when he was only eighteen. Then one day he found himself in a Pakistan jail, accused of civil disobedience, about to be hanged. And finally, one very fine day, he was sitting on the highest seat of a nation. His life began ordinarily, flowed through various ordinary obstacles, until it no longer remained ordinary. Then the abuse began. He believed if he could not run the country well, nobody else could. What had happened to him? What had made him behave so unexpectedly? One who was always on the side of people now wanted to hide the brutal reality of their sufferings, just like all those other obnoxious villains in the history of the world did. The more I thought about him the more it became obvious that he was actually a very complex man, one who could live gloriously with a terrible lie. He could ignore what he did not like.

Lutfuzzaman Babul once spoke about him briefly after he had attended a special dinner Sheikh Mujib had organized for newspaper editors. The dinner was held at the national press club in the heart of the city instead of at Mujib's residence, and at least forty editors attended it. There was no time for a personal conversation. Sheikh Mujib had just come back from Pakistan, formed a government, and begun instituting his ideas for a new Bangladesh. He gave a short speech to explain his vision and introduced some of the key

www.pathagar.com

personalities who would lead different departments of his administration. They would advise him on how to approach the international community, to which countries the first delegates would be sent seeking financial aid, which country could be our foremost business partner, how to deal with the domestic elements that opposed the liberation of Bangladesh, and how the regional relationship among south Asian nations could be improved. The *Freedom Fighter* printed a piece on the programme; it was about policy, policy analysis, and policy in perspective. In contrast, our meeting was to be very different. It was more personal than official. It was at his residence and upon his own request; it might shed some light on the mystery of his life.

Before the meeting was arranged, or more precisely, before I wore the Mujib coat, I had many questions on my mind. I always thought that if I ever had a chance to be with him face to face, I would ask him a set of well-constructed questions. Why must he remain the prime minister of the country at any cost? Why would he not form a national solidarity government so that everyone felt involved in nation-building, and everyone would equally share the responsibility if it failed? If he led a solidarity government it would not undermine him as a leader; he would always be Sheikh Mujib to us. In fact, it would make him a more pragmatic leader, one who knew how to reap the harvest even when the wind blew hard. I would also ask him why he was not looking to employ an international adviser if he thought there wasn't anyone suitable for that role within the Awami League. There were many notable personalities in different countries who had taken a demolished nation to glory after the Second World War and one or two of them might like to help Bangladesh. Somebody could help us plan our city and its traffic; somebody could reorganize our educational and monetary systems; somebody could frame an agricultural development policy and a national disaster containment programme; somebody could give a satisfactory solution to the anti-state elements that helped Pakistan during the war. He might want to avoid me, as politicians always did. He might find me outrageous and not look me in the eye. But that would not stop me from doing what was right. I would capture the man who had become the shadow of his own image and the machine behind his speeches.

www.pathagar.com

Then I would tell our people what politics meant, and what struggle for freedom really meant.

Now hours away from meeting him, I could not think of anything to ask him. My words were gone; they were lost in some remote corner of my heart and I could not find them. I sat with a piece of paper and ended up producing a few bullets against which I wanted to write the questions I must ask him. Hour after hour passed. Nur Hussain was ready to leave. 'We should be on our way,' he said, and then, 'we must be on our way, hurry up,' and finally, 'we do not want to be late, do we? If we do not start right now, we may even miss the appointment.' Still I could not produce one single question that I felt was relevant and important. On our way, sitting between two militia members, I decided I would not ask him anything. A man wearing a Mujib coat could not charge Mujib with any wrongdoing; a man wearing a Mujib coat could not object to anything said or done by any other man wearing a Mujib coat, not even when he saw people dying. It would not be civil.

www.pathagar.com

25

In the Company of the Prime Minister

Sheikh Mujib embraced all three of us one by one, and then led us to the sofa with his left hand on Nur Hussain's shoulder. He addressed him as 'my brother' and softly encouraged him to sit beside him. Moina Mia and I sat across the tea table; it was covered with a piece of embroidered cloth depicting a golden boat.

He was tall; I guess taller than ninety-nine per cent of Bangladeshis. I felt if lightning struck right now he would receive it first and deflect it from us. He would create a second Noah's Ark, Mujib's Ark, to protect us from floods, and would bear our guilt and accept our punishment on his shoulders. It was not accidental that Pakistanis feared him so much and incarcerated him so many times. They knew what a mortal threat he was. I also felt he was the most gracious man I had ever met.

During our visit, which didn't last more than thirty minutes, I devoted my attention to observing him. It appeared that all my questions and fears about him were unnecessary. If I had not come to see him, I would have lived my entire life harbouring the wrong impression. No books would ever give me an experience like the one I got from this meeting. No historian would have language enough to describe what I saw before my eyes. They could write books and articles about his politics; they could emphasize his heroism, put him in a historical perspective; but they would not be able to portray the real man sitting before me.

I did not see any suggestion of power games in his manner. He behaved like someone you might meet at the tea stall in your neighbourhood, or on a cross-town bus, or at a local station waiting for the same train. He did not speak of politics at all and specifically

www.pathagar.com

nothing about the famine or the 7 March speech which had brought us all together. He drank tea with us in a regular teacup, raised the biscuit plate towards us and himself ate a biscuit in small bites as he asked Nur Hussain about his parents, about agriculture, about life in general in Gangasagar.

How was it possible for this simple man to give so many fiery, politically charged, epoch-changing speeches during so many critical historical moments over the last twenty-five years? How had he managed to inspire an entire population to the cause of freedom? All I understood was he was a human being first, and then a leader; he knew himself and his people very well. He understood their fight. His greatness lay in his extraordinary ability to remain simple in spite of being the head of a country of seventy million.

Nur Hussain answered his queries in broken sentences. He was too overwhelmed by his presence. I suppose he was busy looking for words to make his answers sound polite and complete. Speaking with the prime minister demanded a particular set of skills, I had warned him beforehand. Questions must be properly heard and understood, and answers must be given in full sentences, with good pronunciation and modulation, so that the question did not have to be repeated. He said he had understood me, and he would remember this during our visit. But now he seemed lost.

Sheikh Mujib often completed Nur's sentences by relating stories of his own experience of life in the village. He was born in Tungipara in the Gopalgonj district, he reminded us, which was more or less the same as Gangasagar or any other village in Bangladesh. When he was a child, the only fun they had there was jumping into the canal from the bamboo bridge above. Then he looked at Nur Hussain as if enquiring if children still did the same in Gangasagar for fun, or if anything had changed. When he did not receive a response, he began again. He spoke about crickets in the chickpea fields, butterflies among pumpkin flowers, thirsty crows drinking from date juice pitchers, and of chasing the full moon in the evening across the fields. He would have loved to visit the place where sepoy Mostafa Kamal had sacrificed himself for the country, he said in the end. He would be happy to have Nur Hussain beside him at that time.

It was such a serious point, but Nur Hussain only smiled.

www.pathagar.com

What are you doing, you little insect, you are embarrassing me, I said in my mind. Don't just smile, show some manners; say: *It would be an honour, Mr Prime Minister. What a beautiful idea!* Make your life a bit easier by showing some enthusiasm. What a leader like him cannot do for you? He can direct his people to offer you a highway construction contract. He can mould your life with gold. There cannot be any better prize than being in his good books during such a difficult time.

Sheikh Mujib continued in his usual easy manner: 'Would villagers appreciate a monument in Gangasagar in memory of Mostafa Kamal?'

Nur Hussain nodded, though I had warned him specifically against only nodding to the prime minister. Only people with little or no self-esteem would nod to a proposal instead of expressing their consent verbally.

But Sheikh Mujib accepted his answer as valid. What a wise leader. All-forgiving. 'So be it,' he said. 'A monument for Mostafa Kamal.' He repeated the sentence, as if trying to register the decision in his mind, or indirectly trying to extract some response from Nur Hussain.

At this point Nur Hussain cracked his knuckles. *He cracked his knuckles! I am going to kill you, Nura, come home tonight; I am going to drink your blood.* The thumb first, then index, middle, ring, pinky of the right hand, and then of the left hand, producing sharp popping sounds. Sheikh Mujib noticed this, remained silent until Nur Hussain popped his last finger, then continued the conversation with ease. 'People of Gangasagar deserve to be honoured for their resilience,' he said in conclusion. 'They are great people.'

Then it was Moina Mia's turn.

He was the complete opposite of Nur Hussain. While Nur Hussain withdrew into his silences, and showed a degree of detachment and disinterestedness, Moina Mia spoke a lot, and spoke with intimacy and fervour. He addressed Sheikh Mujib as Mujib Bhai, which spoke of the cordial relationship they had between them. 'I called them to my residence, told them Mujib Bhai wants to talk to you, you must go,' he said. He pointed at Nur Hussain. 'This one argued we had schedules for public meetings in the constituency. People would wait. Continuity is a big factor in a political campaign, he said. I told

www.pathagar.com

him when Mujib Bhai wanted us to see him, public meetings, even if there were hundreds of them, could not stop us. They were irrelevant. As you yourself have said, Mujib Bhai, there are things that can be sacrificed for things that cannot be sacrificed so long as someone is alive. Now here we are, sitting before you.'

Sheikh Mujib thanked him quietly, probably trying to remember the occasion when he had said such a thing, and asked him about his wife and children. He asked how the children were doing at school, which school they were attending, why he had not brought them along; they too would have had a good time. He must bring them during his next visit. Moina Mia's answers were prompt. He always made sure he behaved like an ideal follower of his leader, one who knew what he would be asked and what the ideal answers would be. When asked if the school buildings were adequately renovated after the war to make students comfortable in the classrooms, he said they had not only been renovated but also adorned with state-of-the-art scientific equipment and study materials. 'Mujib Bhai, you'll be surprised to hear that a new generation of students will soon graduate from these schools with exceptional wisdom and analytical ability. They won't be like our forefathers, a foot in the mud, more related to death than life, always tired and whining; they'll make us proud in every possible way.' He became emotional when he narrated how his own son learnt the classifications of mammals within a week thanks to the illustrated textbooks introduced the previous year. Those books even featured a picture of the first human footprint on the moon dust. 'Can you believe,' he said, 'after only three years' work we are only three years behind America?' He lowered his voice, as if giving away some secrets. 'We're thinking of at least half a dozen Nobel Prizes in the next two decades in the fields of science, medicine, and poverty alleviation. That day is not far when we will overtake India and China as the most prosperous nation in the eastern bloc. We may even start a transcontinental competition with Liechtenstein in the field of investment and banking.'

'*Likh-tan-stine?*' Sheikh Mujib asked absent-mindedly.

'The largest country in Europe, Mujib Bhai, larger than France and Germany combined. The whole country is a bank and the whole world stores their money there. People of Liechtenstein do not need to work to buy something.'

www.pathagar.com

It was my turn now. I was ready for it. I was ready, in fact, from the moment I had decided not to ask him anything. He was not the enemy, I said to myself. He was a friend, our most reliable friend. Those who said he was an enemy said it to create enmity between us—between him and his people. They would love to see us fall apart. He could not go to every house and give lessons of citizenship to people who were letting their countrymen down by being selfish. It was not possible. He could only guide. Accepting his guidance was up to us citizens.

After one of the members of the private militia who had escorted us appeared at the door, I understood my time with him would be short. It did not matter, I said to myself. It was not important how much time I had passed with him, how many questions he had asked me and how many of them I had understood and successfully answered. That I had sat face to face with him was good enough for me to give him a permanent place in my memory. I could live with that for a long time to come. Perhaps my whole life. I wished every Bangladeshi had a chance to sit with him. He looked at me and I sensed immediately he knew he had besieged me with that look. He could see through me, analyse my fears and doubts and interpret my conceptions and misconceptions. Then he took his pen from his chest pocket and carefully put it in my chest pocket. I would need it, he said; I would need it when the time was right. Then came the embrace, that soft, caring embrace, and a sweet goodbye to the three of us. He bade a special goodbye to Nur Hussain, whom he kept in his embrace one moment more and whom he called 'my brother' again.

www.pathagar.com

26

A Transformation

I could not sleep that night. I could not sleep the following morning, and the afternoon after that. Whenever I closed my eyes I saw Sheikh Mujib's face. I saw him sitting at his window wondering what to do about the famine, about all the people who loved him but now questioned his leadership. I saw him suffer at the news of every single death in the country. He had a tear for every departed soul. It was a sad, sad face I saw—sad and anxious and exhausted.

I imagined he could not sleep either. How could he? Our institutions were not functioning properly. His colleagues in the government did not value his trust. They were supposed to work hard to make the institutions strong so the country eventually became strong. But they took advantage of his dependence on them. It was they who had sold the relief items to the black market, multiplying people's sufferings. If anyone deserved a bad day today, it was they, not he.

I wore my Mujib coat every day. I wore it whenever I went out—even if it was for a few minutes, say to buy turmeric powder or a pack of chickpeas, or just to take out the garbage—as a tribute to his heroism. I said hello to people whom I had seen on the street for years now but had never wanted to speak to. I did not care how nasty they were as individuals and neighbours, or how young or old or politically indifferent and inexperienced they appeared. 'We have already lost over a million people,' I told them. 'If Sheikh Mujib is as strict as we would like him to be at this time, to bring the country back to what we call the right track, he will have to kill another million. Is that what you really want? More deaths, mounting anger, madness and mayhem? Who among you can stand before me with your hand upon your heart, your mind free of clouds, and solemnly pronounce that you have put your country before yourself? Who among you can claim you are not tainted by bloodshed or violence of

www.pathagar.com

some sort? You may choose not to answer me, but I know the answer right away; it is here, in my own heart. Sheikh Mujib will have to kill our friends, our neighbours, our relatives, siblings, parents, husbands and wives, our children, because every house, every family, every neighbourhood has contributed to the making of this mess. If all us people are not cured, the country cannot be cured. Maybe he does not want to see any more blood on the road after all the blood we had to shed to free the country. If he does not, my belief is he is still the most patient person around here, our wisest and greatest person. He knows blood cannot be washed away with blood.'

I shook hands with rickshaw-wallahs at street corners where they waited for passengers, began easy and sweet political conversations with them, grabbed their palms until they spoke at least one or two good words about Sheikh Mujib. I asked shopkeepers the price of mustard oil and garlic cloves loudly so that everyone saw I was in a Mujib coat and everyone understood Sheikh Mujib had not lost his voice despite everything: at least one Bengali was standing firm for him.

At home, I bathed regularly for the sake of the coat. I shaved my beard with the sharpest straight razor available in the market, and smeared coconut oil on my hair so that it did not look unkempt. Working morning and evening, I kept the flat clean and the stairs and the yard shiny and spotless. There were dry weeds in the shadow behind the gate. I removed them with a spade, sprinkled water on the ground so that the dust settled down quickly. I opened all the windows to let in fresh air and light and regularly played the patriotic songs of Dwijendra Lal Roy on my two-in-one stereo, sometimes until late into the evening. If every house is uncluttered like ours, I believed, Sheikh Mujib will be successful. Great leaders too need great public support in critical moments.

Nur Hussain did not wear his coat when we went out for groceries or to attend burial prayers. He was merely following my suggestions, I remembered. He was improving. He was improving exactly the way I wanted him to. But I wore mine with great passion. He might have found that contradictory. But I did not care. My priority was my leader. It would take me a thousand years to explain to him the worth of a leader like Sheikh Mujib in full, shallow and unimaginative as he

www.pathagar.com

was. Sheikh Mujib needed people like me who could evolve with time, who could leave behind their individual vendettas and serve some greater purpose. Appreciating his worth needed generosity and intellect. I understood what Sheikh Mujib was for us and what would make him complete in the new age.

As I spoke to the people, I gathered most of them genuinely believed the famine would cost Sheikh Mujib dearly. It had already made him somewhat unpopular. Who knew where it was going to lead the Awami League as a party. If the present course of events could not be thwarted, as some predicted, the country would soon fall into the hands of those who opposed independence. They meant the Islamic fundamentalists, who were still living among us like intelligent predators, and wanted to reunite our country with Pakistan at any cost. The defeat of Sheikh Mujib would mean their victory and the eventual extinction of the Bengali nation. That could not be allowed to happen. Not on our soil.

I hugged people again and again, patted their backs, and whispered to them in consolation. 'Let us not doubt it,' I said, 'that the bad days will end. They will end because we still have people like Sheikh Mujib among us who can see beyond the present. He knows what is going to happen to us next year or ten, twenty years after that. It is not the first time in our history that we have faced hardship, and the problem now is not sovereignty: it is something as mundane, and essential, as food. We will get over it; after all, we have already attained precious sovereignty. We will kill all the fish in our thousands of rivers to feed our hungry people. We will collect all the leaves from the jungle and all the grass from the fields to fill our stomachs. We will live on simple rainwater, if nothing else is available. But we won't have to do that because Sheikh Mujib will soon be victorious. Sheikh Mujib has always been victorious, hasn't he? People of this country have known one leader alone: that's him. He is a legend in our land. People will not desert him simply because we happen to have a temporary shortage of food that has brought us to our knees. The Bengali nation is not so fickle. *Joy Bangla.*'

www.pathagar.com

www.pathagar.com

BOOK TWO

www.pathagar.com

www.pathagar.com

1

The Dishonourable Demise of Two Burglars

Abdul Ali visited our flat one afternoon. He was in his punjabi and Mujib coat. The clothes were still new, but it seemed he had already lost interest in them. He had no interest in talking either. He just sat on the sofa, silently drank the tea that Nur Hussain had made him, and looked around. After a few sips, he pushed the cup away.

'Is the tea not good?' I asked. 'Do you want some more sugar? Perhaps a few more drops of milk.'

That was not it.

Ruhul Amin the gatekeeper had shot two people dead the previous night, he said.

They were burglars. They came in the dark, grabbed two sacks of rice, hurled them over their shoulders, and then tried to leave the premises over the boundary wall. Surprisingly, they came wearing Mujib coats and seemed to know exactly where the rice was. It was not immediately known if they had accomplices or acted alone out of sheer desperation. Moina Mia had advised local militia members to look into the matter.

Though it was an unfortunate event, I told him, it was actually the fault of the dead. True, we were passing through a famine, but that did not give us the right to break into people's houses to steal from them! 'Where is morality? Where are social values, common sense and our desire to protect each other? Are we all turning into animals because we have not had a meal last night and we do not have any rice left for tomorrow?' I told him the matter was not too complicated for someone with a stable mind to understand. Ruhul Amin was only doing his job. 'Like the police. Will the police allow someone to leave with bags of banknotes from the vault of a bank just because the

www.pathagar.com

criminal needs the money? Not at all. Gatekeepers have to be gatekeepers.'

I waited for his approval. His concern was sincere, I could see that. I was sure his confusion would soon fade away.

Nur Hussain had followed neither Abdul Ali nor me. Standing at the window he must have thought we were talking about professional matters that he need not concern himself with. He moved to the kitchen and stayed there, leaving us alone.

Abdul Ali sat motionless. He looked at me for such a long time that I felt uncomfortable under his gaze. So I thought an elaboration might help. I had seen many dumb people working at the party offices. The dumb became dumber there within a short while. The party sucked the intelligence out of them. It diluted their personality. Besides, he was not a properly educated person; probably he had no idea that there was a huge conflict between individual choice and collective good. Individual choices must be set aside to allow the collective to prosper; even if that meant dealing with death.

'There is no place for burglars in our society,' I said. 'Today's burglars will be tomorrow's robbers, witches and demons. They will eat us up. Today they will steal our rice, tomorrow our sanity, the next day our country. The day after that we will look behind us and find that our thousand-year-old history has disappeared. We have no tradition, no moment of sacrifice to take inspiration from. Those burglars were enemies of us all. We are better off without them.'

Abdul Ali got up quickly, as if electrified, and then walked a few quick steps, then took a few slow steps, and then stood still, before saying he was not here to talk about the shooting, but to inform us we had more good luck in store for us. He gave me a forced smile. It was probably better than our previous good luck, he said. Knowing that he would not explain what this good luck was, I asked when Moina Mia expected us.

He was expecting *me*, not *us*—he corrected me, with one eye on the kitchen door, and then said he was expecting me right away. I must go with him.

I told Nur Hussain I would return soon, would inform him in detail what our meeting was about, he should not worry. This was the first time I was going to such a meeting without him.

www.pathagar.com

He nodded.

Was the meeting about the two dead men? Was Abdul Ali trying to tell me something by only giving me the barest of information? He paced all over the room. If he was concerned, I consoled myself, it was only natural to conclude that he himself was associated with the burglary, not I. I was not a close enough friend he would be worried for if I were in danger. I must take note, I thought. If I'm asked if I've noticed any change in his behaviour, I could mention it. I could also mention the half-finished tea and his indifference. I must not forget anything.

As I put on my Mujib coat over my punjabi, he watched me closely. 'In case I stay out late,' I said. 'So many things can happen.' He did not respond. 'In case it gets cold,' I said, louder. He still did not respond.

Ruhul Amin opened the small door of the gate and stood aside for us to enter. If he could, I thought, he would have run away from us. Having shot two people, he was now a victim of his own guilt. He could not raise his eyes to meet mine.

'Salaam,' I said, finding him silent. 'How are we doing today? Are we all happy in this beautiful weather?' I noticed the .303 rifle on his back. Not a technically advanced killing machine. It was old, and had a rusty trigger, barrel and muzzle, as if it had been buried under the ground for a decade or more. But it had done its job.

He must have guessed that I knew about the shooting, especially as I had been with Abdul Ali. Ruhul Amin must now think I was watching him minutely and wondering how he had hidden that killer instinct every time we had met and he had said salaam to me. He noticed me looking at him, and realized I could not have looked at him without looking at the rifle, without associating it with the act of killing, and without concluding that the rifle was only an extension of his unstable and repulsive inner self. 'Sometimes it is hard for a man carrying a rifle to dissociate himself from the rifle,' I said to myself. 'They become one. The ego of the person makes the rifle powerful, and the rifle makes a beast of the person acting as a crude replacement for his spine.'

It was better to further clarify what was already clear. Instead of

www.pathagar.com

condemning him, I thought I would sympathize with him. The dead were dead, I would say. It did not matter if they were two or two thousand. Whatever the reason, and however brutal it might appear to him, the truth was they were no more, and, therefore, any regret was unnecessary. And I could say what I had already said to Abdul Ali: it was not his fault. If they had not gone to steal, they would not have been dead now—provided they were not already victims of the famine. See, I am not dead, I would argue. My head is working fine, and I am not screaming for mercy for myself. He could see Abdul Ali was not dead either. That was because we had been able to control our most sinister thoughts the moment they raised their heads. We did not let them out, make us weaker individuals, and endanger our lives. We were not involved in silly crimes. 'One does not need to work hard to see the truth in such a matter,' I said to myself. If the burglars were so desperate for rice, they could choose a house without a gatekeeper or a house without a gatekeeper with a weapon on his shoulder. I could have pointed out lots of ifs like this, which would have led to one logical conclusion: Ruhul Amin was not guilty of murder.

Then, on second thoughts, I stopped myself. What would my sympathy mean to him? Wouldn't he have to kill again tonight if he came across burglars crossing the boundary wall with sacks of rice on their shoulders? What if they came in their hundreds, in league with all the people that went hungry in the neighbourhood? What if they were from his family, people to whom he owed something? They might say they needed his cooperation now more than ever, and they wanted rice, only rice—to feed their starving bellies, not money or animals or houses or plots of land in return.

I could not decide the destiny of men, I thought, not even when they were burglars. Ruhul Amin must know what he had to do at a given moment in his given role. If he had killed someone it was entirely his responsibility. He would have to work through his anxiety and guilt. If the burglars proved too many and if they came every night, still it would be he who would have to decide what to do.

Standing at the small door I noticed Abdul Ali step towards Ruhul Amin, take him in a hearty embrace, and pat him on the back. 'Brother Ruhul,' he said, in an equally hearty tone, '. . . my brother . . . O my brother!'

www.pathagar.com

Momentarily, I was confused. Was all this show of affection for killing the burglars and keeping his employer safe, or to express his sympathy with Ruhul Amin so that he did not feel bad for what he had done? I did not know.

Ruhul Amin wiped his nose on the sleeve of his punjabi and freed himself from Abdul Ali's embrace almost forcefully before going back into his gatekeeper's cell. From the gate I saw him standing against the wall with his eyes closed.

'He is in agony,' I whispered to Abdul Ali. 'Not every killer will feel the same way. Some will not look back, not for a moment. There is nothing called remorse in their book. Some will eat their clothes because they are not aware of what they are doing; the killing and its aftermath do not exist for them. Some will collapse in extreme fear. Will they kill themselves one day, like they killed their victims? Some will be so startled by their own action, they will behave as though they are deaf and dumb. But this one here is different. He will be scared of the slightest things now. Don't talk to him. Whatever you say—good or bad—will embarrass him. Leave him alone. He will have to rip through his tormented soul before he is ready for a normal conversation. It is not easy. Give him time.'

www.pathagar.com

2
Sold

I sat down on the sofa, beside the bundles of leaflets which covered almost half the floor, and waited for Moina Mia. There was a door on the right which opened on to another room where I could see a huge pile of boxes. Two workers were unloading a van in the yard and making another huge pile at the rear corner.

Moina Mia came through the door and handed me a leaflet which had two items on it: Sheikh Mujib's face and 'OUR LIBERATOR' in bold letters. I looked at it once and then left it on the tea table.

'So what do you think?' Moina Mia asked, sitting opposite me.

He had not told me anything about what Abdul Ali had referred to as 'my good luck', so I didn't immediately understand what exactly he wanted to know from me.

'What do you think of the leaflets?' he asked. 'Would they make people curious about the message?'

Though the leaflets looked like promotional material of some remedial and therapeutic massage centre, I said I thought they looked good. I wanted to concentrate on our deal; maybe after the deal, if it went well, I would feel more enthusiastic about the leaflets.

'Only good?' he said. He was disappointed. 'Then see this one.' He extended a new page to me, which was smaller in size but heavier. 'Peel n' Stick. Water-resistant, safe for any surface and restickable. Just came from the supplier. By the weekend, every bus stop, electricity pole, hospital door, school gate, restaurant counter, and public library desk in the city will be covered with these. Thousands of boxes have already been dispatched to carefully chosen Awami League representatives.'

I held the sticker up. It had the same picture, though not the same wording. The new wording, printed in the same bold letters, was: 'OUR PROTECTOR'.

www.pathagar.com

'We have to be innovative,' he said, sticking one on the tea table. 'The target audience of this campaign is the new generation, more specifically, those who did not go to the war because they were too young at the time. For future political stability in the country it is necessary that they know who Sheikh Mujib is.'

It was an honour that he had let me see these materials before the target public saw them, I said, instead of commenting on their artistic quality. They had inspired me. I now felt more involved in the campaign than ever. If there was anything I could do other than what I was already doing, he should tell me. 'Maybe I can take a box of leaflets with me and distribute them in the market,' I said. 'I can stand at the crossroads and campaign among young people who come there looking to steal food. There are so many of them and if they are not brought into the party soon, they may get involved with drugs and addiction. It won't be a burden for me at all. I have to go to the market anyway.'

'Distributing one box of leaflets at a local market won't have much of an effect,' he said. 'It won't have the kind of significant impact we're thinking of. We've gathered together fifty-five different types of leaflets, twenty-eight types of Peel n' Sticks, sixteen types of banners, fourteen types of billboards, and twenty different ads to go on TV and radio, as part of our nationwide informational campaign. We have arranged twelve hundred exhibitions and forty-two thousand discussion programmes across the nation, all to be executed in the next twelve months. For our seventy million people we have printed a mass of three hundred and fifty million leaflets so that each person receives five copies. We do not want to see a single mind in the country to go against Sheikh Mujib and the Awami League.'

'Sheikh Mujib has liberated us—it is a historical truth,' I said. 'Who can dispute that? He can live a thousand glorious lives only on the basis of that fact.'

'We want every individual in this country to enquire about Sheikh Mujib when they wake up in the morning; we won't stop until children refuse to go to sleep unless they are told stories of Sheikh Mujib, and girls refuse to get married until their grooms promise to be loyal to Sheikh Mujib. We will invade every brain and plant there the flag of Bengali nationalism. Bangladesh will be a different country soon.'

www.pathagar.com

He was happy to see my willingness to help, he said, but he needed me for something else, for something more important. He pushed the stickers aside, dusted his palms on each other, and said, 'There is a price for everything, Khaleque Biswas; there is nothing that money cannot buy in the time of famine. In fact, the famine has made money more powerful, hasn't it?'

If I stayed with him, said Moina Mia, I would never have to worry about money again. 'Khaleque Biswas, believe me. This is it.' I should forget about being a journalist for once, he said, and let him guide me. He knew where the money was and how to win it. It was not any ordinary deal; it was a deal with Sheikh Mujib, the most powerful man in the country. Then he came to the point I was waiting for.

He wanted something I had, and he was ready to pay a price for it. In the same way, Sheikh Mujib wanted something he had, so Sheikh Mujib must pay him a price if he wanted to have it for himself. Did I understand what it was that he wanted to buy from me?

It was simple. I told him I understood and I was ready to sell. 'Not a problem . . . not at all a problem. We are talking about our magnificent prime minister; when he wants something, he will have it. Have I shown any sign that I will refuse him anything?'

'It is not that,' he replied. 'I knew you would not disagree, and I knew it on the first day we met. Your eyes spoke of great cooperation. There was no sign of pity or revenge in them. You were as simple as water. But we have to maintain a certain decency in dealing with each other, don't we, especially when it is about such a sensitive product, so that our petty interests do not hamper our great future.'

My admiration for him had reached such a level, I said, that I could do anything for him. I was not teasing him. I really felt I had become a different person. 'I am a nationalist,' I said. 'I have duties to my motherland. I will bring my product to you. From now on it is yours. Do whatever you want to do with it. I don't need to know anything.'

He heard me silently, but did not answer.

I was aware of the quality of my product, I said calmly; I knew how much it was worth. I asked him if he knew he would have to come up with a competitive price. He said I should not worry about

www.pathagar.com

the price because the amount he was going to mention would surely surprise me.

Thus I sold Nur Hussain once again. First I sold him to the people on the street for their coins. Then I sold him to Moina Mia for his campaign. Now I sold him to Sheikh Mujib through Moina Mia. I believed he would accept it. He had never disregarded me, never wanted to understand money, though it was for money that he had come to the city from that distant village. Besides, he would be doing the same job. What would there be to complain about? The only difference was he would speak to a different, and a larger, audience now. We would travel across the country and speak for Sheikh Mujib. We would be sent a few days early, along with members of the militia. We would live in the area reserved for the VIPs. In due time, we would be advised when Nur Hussain would speak and for how long. It would be one paragraph of the 7 March speech or a few more paragraphs from it, which would be edited and supplied to us beforehand so that Nur Hussain had enough time to memorize it. Some new paragraphs would also be written to make the speech relevant to the subject matter of Sheikh Mujib's speech of the day. They would have a particular message for the nation and it must be articulated religiously.

www.pathagar.com

3

An Excuse for Killing

As I left I saw Abdul Ali waiting for me anxiously. He took my hand and pulled me aside to tell me that gatekeeper Ruhul Amin had decided to quit his job. He had a family with three children to feed. They would starve to death if he quit at this moment. 'Is he out of his mind to come up with such a horrible decision? What does he think he is doing?' Abdul Ali asked if I would be kind enough to have a few words with Ruhul Amin to convince him to stay. He had tried his best but it seemed the gatekeeper was adamant.

'Use your best words, Khaleque sahib. Be brutal, if need be. A person of that nature deserves to be punished. I guess he does not understand he has no right to make a family suffer by taking such an obscene decision. An ideal worker will never succumb to the pressures of his workplace no matter what, what do you say? He cannot afford it. He will, in turn, force the workplace to succumb to him. He will fight till his last breath because he knows if he loses his job he will die anyway. So be aggressive. Yell at him as loud as you can. Slap him right in the ears, if you need to, so that he cannot hear even his own thoughts. Give him no chance to argue.'

I did not have any special relation with Ruhul Amin, and I did not think my words would work either. I had no idea why Abdul Ali thought I might be successful where he had failed. But out of courtesy I told him I would go to the cell and give it a try.

From his chair, Ruhul Amin saw me coming in. When I closed the door behind me, and stood with my back to the window, so that nobody could disturb us in case he broke into tears or became agitated, he looked at me once again. I did not know what to say; probably I was afraid to be alone with him, so I stood silently waiting for him to begin. The rifle was right on the table, within his reach. It was foolish, utterly foolish, to be there especially on a day that

www.pathagar.com

promised me a better future. Just at the moment I decided to leave, he spoke up.

'They gave me no choice,' he said, 'absolutely no choice. They came to me, both of them, three, four times before last night, and asked me to leave the gate open for them, just for a few minutes, so that they could escape quietly with the rice on their backs. I knew the house had a large rice storage room and it was full; losing two bags from there would not hurt Moina Mia, and they were burdened with a large number of close relatives who had recently come over from the village. My problem lay elsewhere. I am the gatekeeper; I am entrusted with the responsibility of safeguarding the house and anything in it, precious or trivial. I cannot leave the gate open and unattended for them or for anybody, not even for a few seconds, so that they can steal from my employer. It will be a breach of my pledge. They refused to understand me; they knew nothing about pledges or promises or loyalty. They said, then, they would have to leave the house by climbing over the wall. Are you following me? That is what they said. Over the wall. I showed them my rifle; I told them it was active and always loaded, though it was not. "You don't want to know what it is capable of doing. You really don't want to know."

"'Stop us if you want," they replied. "Perhaps it is better to take a bullet in the back once in a while than live in eternal shame." I swear to you I have never heard anything stranger than that. I could not believe them. How could I—carrying, as I was, a rifle for such a long time on my shoulder, which I had always considered the source of such intense fear that no man would be able to conquer it? I did not believe they meant exactly what they said. Will anyone with the slightest sense of responsibility be actually rattled by such threats from burglars? "Poor people do not want to be friends with poor people," I said. "They want to be friends with those that can provide. I am not your friend. When you need help I will not be on your side." I spoke the truth, didn't I, though it was lowly of me? Sometimes it is acceptable to disgrace yourself if that saves a life, don't you think so? I wanted to frighten them. A gatekeeper has to be tactical if he wants to avoid trouble. I had no idea how desperate they were. They gave me the time when they would steal—the exact day and hour and

www.pathagar.com

minute. They even showed me which corner of the boundary wall they had chosen for their escape.

'I waited for them the whole day. I cleaned the rifle, loaded it, and inspected it again and again to make sure it would not fail when I needed it. When evening came, I took my position along the boundary wall well ahead of time, aiming at the exact spot, with my heart beating, my legs shaking, my forehead sweating, waiting to prove myself wrong. They would appear only if they believed in miracles, I thought. Then, you know, sometimes reality is too indistinguishable from miracles. Sometimes necessity is just too harsh.'

He knew his victims. He had warned them and frightened them, and tried to stop them. Yet they went ahead.

My head reeled. How could people be so reckless?

'You want me to stay here?' he asked. 'I guess that is why Abdul Ali sent you to me. He is such a wonderful person. I wish him nothing but well. But you tell me, tell me sincerely, can I stay here any more after what has happened? Shouldn't I be ashamed of what I have done? Shouldn't I take the rifle, load it, and aim it at myself, ending the power of miracles forever?'

I had never come into contact with a killer. I wanted to thank him because he had told me honestly what he knew of the matter. But I found that I was growing angry. 'You would not do that, mister,' I said loudly, moving away from the window. I thought it was useless to protect someone who considered it wise to destroy himself. 'You would not kill yourself or go to the police to surrender or even quit this job. You will have your lunch on time, relish your afternoon tea, say your evening prayers, and abide by your duties day in, day out. I guess I am a good judge of human character; I know exactly how far you'd go.' I bent before him, and edged close to his face. 'You're a piece of dirt, you know. You're a cheap, obnoxious, miserable Bengali man who is completely immersed in desperate lunacy. Don't find my saying this outrageous, because even if I try and try really hard, I cannot be as outrageous as you have already been. You're not only rude and unkind; you're a shame on all of us. You're worse than an animal.'

I opened the door quickly and rushed out while he stood up behind me to say something. 'No, not a word. You don't have to tell

www.pathagar.com

me anything, no further explanation of the situation, no excuses for your actions, no descriptions of the gloomy and dreadful night you've passed, nothing; not now, not ever. You knew what you were doing when you aimed at them. You could have made a difference by withdrawing yourself from your ego, by assessing your plans, your proactive practices or whatever you call them, but you chose not to. You had idle fantasies about being a loyal worker to your employer. You're a damned man. I can't help you.'

As if chased by crazy dogs, haunted by ghosts, I crossed the small street and came to the main road, where I entered a tea stall to drink a glass of water to the last drop, and started walking again. Under no circumstances would I deny that I had compromised my integrity to a large extent because of my present uncertain financial condition—but killing a person was not a game. There was no excuse for it—including the fact that Ruhul Amin was employed to protect his employer. What did Ruhul Amin think of human life?

A thin fog descended. Through it came the sound of cries from the tent city on the school field. There was a fire there, said someone. 'So big a fire, as if from hell. Tents cannot burn so high and so bright. Impossible. What do we have in a tent? A couple of pillows, a tattered quilt, some earthen cooking pots, empty bottles of sweetened syrup, a bit of rubbish in a bamboo basket, ailing children and parents lying on the floor. They can't burn for long. It is hell. It is definitely hell.'

I walked slowly up the filthy road. People ran any which way they could. Naked children ran, coughing, screaming, laughing like idiots, some standing back, throwing stones at the fire. Neighbours were fighting. Locals were chasing the migrants and the migrants locals. Some woman blamed God for everything that she saw. 'What kind of God is He, no mercy in His heart? Who will bring Him flowers? Who will bow down westward?' Biting her fingers, she watched as the smoke rose to the sky. Some other women, standing behind her, began to weep.

www.pathagar.com

4

You, Not I

I did not want to waste my energy on Ruhul Amin. It would only end up filling my day with misery and thoughts of violence. It would tire me out. There were more important things to do with my time than focusing on other people's idiocy, their chronic hysteria, how they perceived their lives, and whether they had any real desire to remain sensible and noble. 'I am not that cheap,' I said to myself. I wanted to be assured that I really had at my disposal what I had sold to Moina Mia.

'We'll be speaking for Sheikh Mujib,' I told Nur Hussain immediately after I had returned home. 'We'll be speaking soon.' Then I elaborated how soon. 'Within three weeks or so. There is no specific date yet. We'll be informed in time.'

He did not respond, so I told him again. This time I said *he* would be speaking soon. I said it a little louder and more distinctly. 'Hello,' I said, 'I am talking to you, are you listening? Yes, you; there is nobody else in this flat.' I did not care if I sounded rude. He needed to understand silence was not an answer.

He watched me for a moment and then said, '*We* will be speaking,' which he immediately modified to, '*I* will be speaking *soon*. *I* will be speaking for *Sheikh Mujib*.'

His voice shook slightly. I enjoyed that. I enjoyed his weaknesses as much as I enjoyed his brilliance. I wanted him to understand perfectly when I was angry, what I would not tolerate and what gave me an allergy. I did not want him to move even an inch from where I wanted him to stay. I did not want him to understand what I myself did not understand and what I did not want him to understand. I wanted him to smile exactly when I thought a little bit of smiling was acceptable, not before or after that. We would have a beautiful relationship as long as he did not do something that would force me to yell at him.

www.pathagar.com

'Right,' I said. 'That is the deal. That is what we have promised Moina Mia today. Be ready for the call. Bath or no bath, food or no food, always on your feet. Always ready to serve. If you need anything in the meantime, let me know. Do not leave things for tomorrow. If you have any questions, let me know, so that they do not just remain questions and do not affect your performance. Either you solve them following my rules, or I solve them for you as I wish.'

He nodded. 'I will be ready to serve,' he said, 'and I will not leave anything for tomorrow.'

'Now another thing,' I continued. 'If Moina Mia wants to see me again, and you are not a part of the meeting, which may happen more and more as the days go by and as more parties get involved with our work, I will pass on to you upon my return what I know. Like I am doing now. You have to know things. I feel you have to know what's going on even more than I do, and perhaps better than I do. That's because you're the showman and my station is only the backstage.'

'I am the showman,' he repeated obediently.

Then I reminded him he should be careful in his daily movements from now on, much more careful than he had ever been. A moment of complacency could complicate life seriously. He should not climb the stairs without maintaining three-point contacts, should not carry anything heavier than 5 kg by himself, should be careful with soap while having a bath so that he did not slip, giving rise to a first-aid situation. What would I do with a Sheikh Mujib who could not stand on his feet?

When he got up to go, I stood at the door to be sure he followed my advice and held the railing while walking down the stairs.

'Good boy,' I thought. 'Very good boy. That is what I want from you. You will have everything if you follow me.'

The wind screamed at the window. The sun became pitiless.

Looking outside, I passed some time thinking. Then I walked across the room, listening to the silence, dusted the table, and thought. I ate some lentil soup which he had cooked I did not know when and which tasted I did not know of what and thought, while heavy sweat ran down my forehead and into my eyes and mouth. I thought about Sheikh Mujib, Moina Mia, Nur Hussain and myself—

www.pathagar.com

what we were doing and where we all now belonged. We seemed to have become bound by an intricate relationship; something I never thought was possible but was now a stark reality. Sheikh Mujib was no different from Moina Mia or I—I found; we were all fallible and delusional, we were all manipulating in our own spheres of influence. Nur Hussain, who appeared like a ghost from a far-off village, was capable of doing certain things Moina Mia could never do though he wished he could. And despite the fact that I was as ordinary as any man on the street, I could despise Moina Mia as much as I could despise Nur Hussain, and Sheikh Mujib and no state technology or institution could do anything about it. We all were extraordinary and indispensable to each other.The Awami League was facing serious publicity problems. If 1971 was its best year, it was now a dying party. Its genitals were shrivelled; its collarbones were protruding; its soul had disappeared. Time was running out. But as long as the present situation continued, I thought, our relationship would become more active and interesting.

Then, lying in my bed, I thought about the price that Moina Mia had mentioned and I had agreed to accept.

I was shocked.

www.pathagar.com

5

A Thought in the Dark

The night grew deeper. Nur Hussain had returned a lot earlier than I had expected. He had eaten his meal by himself, without saying a word, and then gone to bed without practising the speech.

It was a few days now since he had spoken it; some practice was necessary to maintain focus. But I did not insist. There would be time for practice tomorrow and the day after tomorrow.

I tried to pacify myself by transforming my frustration into solid determination. I must find a comprehensive way of pursuing my interests. I decided not to see Moina Mia any time soon.

I thought through what might happen if I did not see him. Walking, sitting, lying, I thought what I might say if I saw him when I did want to see him, and then what I would say if I saw him after he had sent Abdul Ali looking for me.

I was not scared.

There was no wind to disturb me; no foxes screamed in the bush. But I woke up after an hour or two. After wandering aimlessly across the room for a few minutes, I chopped onions and chillies, washed potatoes in warm water, boiled them, prepared a paste with them, quietly, and ate the meal with rice, sitting at the table. Nur Hussain's room was dark; there was no reason to think I would see him tonight, not in my present mental state; but I stood at his door for at least five minutes before going back to my room.

I woke up again before the night ended. I thought I heard some footsteps on the stairs, Abdul Ali's familiar heavy, slow and clear footsteps coming like beautiful music from the horizon. Moina Mia had understood his mistake and sent him immediately to me to mend it. It was too important to avoid or to be left for the morning.

Through the dark I opened the door and stepped outside to

www.pathagar.com

receive him. 'Come on in, my friend,' I heard myself saying. 'Come on in; I have been waiting for you for a long time. Tea? Any time, not a problem. Just ask. Don't we have an extraordinary bond between us, one that transcends political boundary and social stratum? You bring me important news, so you are an important person to me. You are—if I am honest and if I allow my instincts to speak—more important than any person I know, indeed more admirable than my father was to me. I know how to honour someone like you. Come on in, don't stand there, please; don't hesitate at all; think it your home and you are welcome here any hour of the day.' I opened the door a little more and stood aside, making room for him to get in. 'Have a seat, please,' I said, 'make yourself comfortable. Take a pillow on your lap, if that's what you want. Now put up your feet on the small stool. You must have walked a lot today. That's better. It's my pleasure to press your feet. I will be careful so that I do not press them so hard as to cause tension in your muscles. No, I don't have any ego. It is ego that makes a man, I know that; but for me it is just the wrong component. I don't want to be characterized as inflexible, arrogant and extreme. Those that have ego are actually lazy. They do not know that man is not born with one passion only. No life would have survived more than one second if it were born with only one passion. You think I am doing well? Excellent. That is what I want to hear from a man like you. I mean it. If you do not like me, Moina Mia does not like me. If Moina Mia does not like me, Sheikh Mujib does not like me. If Sheikh Mujib does not like me, I am in torture and after that I no longer exist. Mark this please, mark with kindness, that when you will need to speak in my favour, you may say that this individual is a gentleman, this individual has a genuine desire to promote the nationalist agenda across the nation, provided the nation compensates him generously, and that this individual serves with pride, and serves until he is drenched in his own sweat. Say this with me so that you remember it clearly. Say: this individual has a genuine desire to promote the nationalist agenda. Good. Say it again. This individual—pay attention, please—say: this individual . . . provided the nation compensates him generously . . . (don't forget this part, it is very important) say it again . . . this individual . . . drenched in his sweat. That should be enough. If not, let us begin our conversation

www.pathagar.com

with a discussion on the interconnection between Sheikh Mujib and the future of the Bengali nation so that you know how deeply I have entered into his soul. Let me say this emphatically: Love him or hate him, tell me who we have without him? Who else can we entrust with our country? He is our Arthur, our Lincoln. He is our hero, our Menelaus travelling to Troy. Love him or hate him, come back to him to feel safe, come back every night for supper and honey and milk. Only he is the one who'll fight for us and sing for our children. Love him or hate him, he lives in our heart, he's us.'

There was only darkness and silence. And no man.

I woke up on the floor. Nur Hussain was sitting next to me, looking into my eyes.

The first sensation was of deep pain. I must have hurt myself during the night. There was blood on my nails. My neck was sore. My chest was hidden behind half a dozen long deep scratches.

He sat quietly, like an image of the Buddha from Seokguram Grotto of the Unified Silla Dynasty, hands folded on his lap, in control of his urges, looking serene and unshockable.

'What?' I said and rose slowly. I was about to begin coughing, perhaps from the cold of the floor, but controlled it by pressing my mouth. 'Don't you have anything better to do? Get lost. Go to your room. Go anywhere but stay out of here.'

No, I could not frighten him. He had known I would yell. He was prepared. Frustratingly enough, he had learnt one or two things about me by this time.

As I slowly walked I did not know where my clothes had gone.

In the washroom, I found a towel to cover myself. Throwing a few handfuls of water on my face, I stared at myself in the mirror for several minutes, trying to remember what had happened, while rubbing my chest with my palm. I had gone to the window, I remembered, and screamed at the dark neighbourhood: 'You all that are well fed or unfed tonight, note this carefully: Sheikh Mujib is my father; he was the father of my father, grandfather and my great-grandfather who died a hundred years ago; and he will definitely be the father of all the future sons and daughters of this land, irrespective of their ethnicity and religious identity. It may be a matter of dispute who among our predecessors first believed in the creation of a nation

www.pathagar.com

based on the Bengali heritage, but let there be no dispute that Sheikh Mujib has risen more than everyone else and has fought more than everyone else to found that nation.'

I looked through the window and saw my lungi on the pumpkin bush below, flying like a windsock. A beggar woman was trying to pull it down with a stick.

'Don't you dare,' I yelled at her and shook the windowpanes to draw her attention. 'That's mine; leave it alone.'

She watched me as I ran down the stairs holding the towel to my waist, and began to hit the bush more rapidly than before to free the lungi. I snatched the stick away from her. 'Shall I call them to shave your head for stealing my stuff?' I said. 'Shall I burn your face with boiling water?'

'I saw it first,' she argued and came after me. Her stomach might be empty but her mouth was full of words. 'I saw it there since the morning. All doors in this building were closed. I even asked one or two people on the road if it belonged to them. Where were you when it lay in the fog? A bush is not a place where someone would hang his clothes to dry. Night is not the time when someone would spread his clothes in the bush. This is mine.' I was sure she thought I was not the rightful owner of that piece of cloth, that I was merely depriving her of an opportunity to make some quick money by selling it.

'It does not become yours because you have seen it first,' I said. 'You see that window? Look closely. Raise your head. You know who lives there? Your father. Sheikh Mujib. Not one. Two. If you don't leave this place this moment, you may never leave.'

She grabbed my arms aggressively to reach the stick, tried to bite my arms a few times, but I pushed her back with a shove of my elbow. Defeated, she punched my back and cursed me. 'Animal,' she said, loudly, to draw people's attention to her plight. None of the three or four pedestrians who stopped outside the gate responded to her call. 'I thought I was bad which was why there was no food for me in God's world,' she then said. 'But now I see you're worse than me. You're worse than everyone else down the street. Was your mother bitten by a mad dog when she was pregnant with you? Was your father a dog?'

I collected the lungi in my arms and rushed to beat her for abusing

www.pathagar.com

me but I retreated when, as a defence mechanism, she lifted the front of her sari to show me her genitals. It was something I never expected. As I climbed up the stairs she came behind me and continued calling me a 'dog' in an increasingly loud voice. 'Dog, dog, dog,' she chanted, 'dog, dog . . .' I could feel her shrill voice on my skin.

'Are you blind?' I said to Nur Hussain as he appeared at the door. 'Don't you ever look out of the window? Don't you feel any responsibility to protect what we have in this flat?'

I doubt he heard me. He walked to the window and looked out. He was not looking at the view and the woman did not interest him.

A miserable calmness played on his face.

www.pathagar.com

6

The Gloom in the Face

As expected, Moina Mia sent for me within three days.

Abdul Ali entered slowly and sat idly on the sofa. He had grown old, ugly and lifeless, in the space of a mere seventy-two hours. His forehead folded more frighteningly, and a dark cloud encircled his eyes. He had not had a shave recently.

Was it because he was thinking too much about the well-being of his fellow worker, gatekeeper Ruhul Amin?

He denied it.

'He is doing well,' he said. 'He has proved himself smart by accepting your prudent suggestions. I am glad it crossed my mind that he might respect your words. Fortunately, you were there at the right moment. If he were not convinced that day, he would have had more time to focus on what he had done and then find more reasons to run away.'

My prudent suggestions. I remembered the way I abused him and my angry exit from his small room. It seemed Ruhul Amin had not shared any of that with Abdul Ali. I had doubted if he would, but now I was sure.

I pressed on. 'You may confide in me,' I said. 'Let me be honest about myself. I am not the kind of person to report one's minor sickness to his employer. I do not meddle in other people's business, and I am definitely not a spy.'

He said he felt heavy in the legs, in the waist, in the back and in his head. He felt like creeping to a dark and silent corner, sitting there endlessly, without food, without sleep, with no thought about the surrounding world.

What about his duties at Moina Mia's mansion, I asked. Did they tire him? Was there too much to do every day?

There was not—apart from a few more things over and above the

www.pathagar.com

regular routine due to the construction work and the new campaign. He would not say they were unacceptable or overwhelming. He had worked harder during the election, or even before it, when Moina Mia was restructuring the Awami League after the liberation.

Then why was his face filled with an air of gloom, what made him so quiet?

If only he knew, he said.

'You may ask Moina Mia to grant you a few days' leave,' I said. 'That will give you the opportunity to have some fresh air. Some people go to the countryside when exhausted; some prefer a new city. Some just stay home to enjoy the domestic blessings, the beautiful companionship of family members.'

He became absent-minded, let out a little sigh, and sat with his head down, as if the very name Moina Mia had poisoned his world. Was he feeling guilty for something?

As I put on my Mujib coat, I saw him quiver with some hidden pain, some unexpressed anguish. All at once a supreme quietness hung over him. He forgot my presence and in no time fell asleep on the sofa only to wake up almost an hour later.

'Shall we?' I said.

He yawned and followed me without a word.

Nur Hussain was in his room. There was something weird about him. He did not come out to meet Abdul Ali today. But when I looked back from the road, I saw him watching us from the window. He stood unmoving, an iron man behind the iron grille.

I looked back again a few minutes later.

He was on the road, fifty yards behind us, walking slowly, eyes on the ground. I stopped to see if he had anything to say.

'I might meet the MP today,' I said when he came closer. I did not know why I said I might when I had been summoned to see him and I was already on my way in the company of his messenger. 'Do you have any questions or concerns?'

It was obvious I was trying to hide my embarrassment. I had not asked him that question before I had left the house.

I was surprised to see that though Nur Hussain did not greet him, or even look at him, Abdul Ali extended his hand towards him

www.pathagar.com

graciously and the two shook hands. Abdul Ali's sleepiness was gone. 'It's a real pleasure to see you again,' he said. 'How are you doing?' Then he took his face close to Nur Hussain's and whispered something to him. Nur Hussain looked at him seriously. His look became more intense after Abdul Ali had whispered into his ear again. I nodded when he looked at me, as if I knew what the whisper was about. Then I moved away, to give them some time together.

'I understand perfectly,' I heard Nur Hussain say. 'It is irritating. It is terrible. I can't stop myself from going to the window. I always feel something has happened or is going to happen. Small people may not always think small. You get it, don't you? We need only one person. One person is enough. One person with faith. Who is not frightened. Who will not stop in spite of the suffering. Then it is going to be very, very noisy around here.'

'Of course,' Abdul Ali replied. 'I get it clearly. Thanks for helping.'

'Every man has a vision,' Nur Hussain said. 'Whether he understands it or not. I will not be surprised if I see a lot of people on the road one day. Once in a while a person has to look at himself the way others look at him. If he doesn't and then something bad happens, it is nobody's fault.'

'Of course, of course,' said Abdul Ali. He whispered again, to which Nur Hussain replied loudly. 'Never lose your sanity,' he said. 'Because you cannot be born again.'

We moved to the side of the street to make room for the rickshaws. One rickshaw-wallah, whom I had not seen before—he might be one of the migrants working for the local rickshaw depot—stopped beside us. He was not carrying any passenger. He asked Nur Hussain where he was going, if he needed a ride. 'Nowhere,' said Nur. 'That is perfect for me,' said the rickshaw-wallah as he wiped the seat with his gamchha. 'Get on, please; I am also going nowhere. I will take you there.'

'How much do you charge for a one way trip to the market?'

The rickshaw-wallah smiled. 'Since you ask and the market is the nowhere where you are going, I have to calculate how far the distance is and think approximately how much time it might take me to arrive there including the time spent in the traffic jam, any journey breaks, prayer times,' he said. 'But don't worry; it is free for you.'

www.pathagar.com

That is a trick, I thought. Why would someone offer a free ride when starvation was acute? These rickshaw-wallahs would blackmail any distracted passenger by fooling them with generous words like: 'I believe you, pay as much as you can,' or 'You are an honourable person, how can I charge you at all.' But when they reached the destination, they would not hesitate to shame the passenger if he did not pay more than the fare they deserved.

But Nur Hussain shook Abdul Ali's hand and confidently got on to the rickshaw. As the rickshaw moved, he looked at me briefly, and said: 'No, no question, and no concern. Everything is all right.' Then he began a conversation with the rickshaw-wallah. 'Tell me something about your life,' he said.

'My life?' the rickshaw-wallah asked. 'I do not have one.'

www.pathagar.com

7

At the Crossroads

On the way Abdul Ali and I stopped at a crowd near the crossroads. A woman had jumped from the roof of a two-storeyed house and killed herself. The owner of the house, who was also a woman, and who ran from end to end of the yard yelling at the crowd, said she did not know who the woman was. She was angry that the woman had chosen her house to commit such an unspeakable act. 'Couldn't she jump under the train,' she said, 'like all those others? Couldn't she have chosen the government-owned City Tower to execute her horrible final desire? Now people will say mine is the House of Suicide. Now I'll have to pay someone to clean all the stains from my yard, to burn incense to remove the smell of blood, and invite a moulana to bless the house so that incidents like this never happen again. Is it easy to waste money on such things during these times?'

She pleaded with everyone she found to remove the body as quickly as possible—including small children who could hardly hold themselves upright because they were so skinny—but only one person, a shaky, barefoot, ailing elderly woman, followed her. The woman believed the act of suicide was not the main objective of the woman who now lay dead. 'Look at her,' she said, drawing the owner to a side; 'look at her fingers, her palms, her wrists and elbows; what do you see? Are they shrunk like my hands are?' She raised both of her hands to the light falling through the guava branches. 'Now look here, look from this side. See the toenails? No crack, no fungal infection; all clean and well trimmed. If she were starving, she would have been weak; if she were weak, she would not have had the energy to climb all those twenty-two steps to go to the roof and jump. No, I don't think so. A starving person does not move upward.' Her voice fell because of physical weakness, but her enthusiasm became stronger. 'She wanted to achieve something other than death,' she said. 'You

www.pathagar.com

have to find out what it is. Maybe death was what was to happen—she knew—death is not the most surprising thing one may encounter these days; but she wanted something out of that death that was more important to her, and that may be more bitter and devastating to you as the owner of the house.' Then she lowered her voice. 'If you promise to offer me some rice, you know, any kind, white, brown, boiled, sweet, clean or husked, I can walk around the neighbourhood trying to find it out for you. If you do not have rice, give me whatever you have—wheat, beans, potatoes, red pumpkin, dry mangoes, anything.'

The woman's body had been lying there for at least two hours now, said a rickshaw-wallah. He had been there from the start. In fact, he had seen her when she was in the air, when she glided through the guava branches, when her body became still after a small cry and a few incomplete gasps on the dust. He had pushed the gate open, had shouted in his loudest voice to bring the neighbourhood to the yard. Now he was sitting at a corner on the road, his rickshaw parked in the sun, narrating the story of his misfortune to anyone who would care to listen, but mostly to himself.

'If the wheels had moved faster,' he was saying. 'If my thighs had a little more strength, if time was a little bit slower, if God was not looking away for a moment today, I could have stopped that woman. I could have run and said, "If you want to jump, jump upon me; finish me with you. I've seen hunger, and I've wanted to jump so many times; but then I didn't. It's so great to be alive, even when you can't stand on your feet, even when you cannot stop the thought of eating someone equally as hungry as you." I could have stopped her. Now she is no more.'

I observed the small line of blood that ran from the yard to the road. Someone had covered her with a folded fertilizer bag, which lay like an ornamented winter quilt on her body, the stains of blood serving as a tribute to her savage death.

While I stood behind the crowd, listening to the rickshaw-wallah, and thinking what might happen at my meeting with Moina Mia, wondering if I would be able to voice my dissatisfaction about our deal, Abdul Ali moved forward. He looked at the body for several minutes, moving around it with slow, small, noiseless steps. At one

www.pathagar.com

point he seemed choked and had difficulty in breathing. I was surprised. Wasn't he cracking a joke with Nur Hussain minutes ago? Hadn't he taken the death of Basu and Gesu more easily than this? Working with Sheikh Mujib's militia for such a long time, he could have considered himself a small Angel of Death with a reasonable measure of pride. Did a man's perception of the destruction of his fellow man, then, change from time to time, without his knowing it? 'Take my hand,' I said. 'This way.' I pulled him to one side, sat him down on the ground, and took his head on my lap. The elderly woman came quickly. Forgetting her bargain with the house owner, she sat opposite me and began to fan Abdul Ali. Her elbow popped with every swish of the fan, but her face reflected such concern and dedication that nobody dared offer her help.

'What is going on here?' the house-owner said. She took hardly ten seconds to understand the situation. 'My God,' she said with despair, raising her hands in the fashion of praying, 'Why don't I go to the roof and throw myself off as well! Why am I still standing on my feet! I wouldn't have to see two bodies in a single day right at my doorstep.'

'You want trouble?' I yelled at her. What was she? I could not imagine at that time. A bag of blind and vile selfishness? Living in a two-storeyed house, looking at the world through glitzy curtains, she knew nothing about what went on around her. She thought this famine, this endless line of hungry people, including the one who was now dead, were all conspiring against her to turn her comfortable life upside down. 'If you want trouble, you'll have it,' I said with firmness. 'I'll fill your yard with yet another body, you understand me? I don't care what connections you have and where your relatives come from. Look at him. Not with those hollow, suspicious eyes. Look at him closely with your mind and heart here. Look at him the way you would have looked at yourself. He is my friend, and he is not dying. He only has a temporary nervous trouble. Who wouldn't be nervous upon seeing a body lying two yards away? He is going to be all right soon. For God's sake, how can you talk about death so easily? Go back to your little room and scream as much as you like. We need some quiet here.'

The woman looked around in embarrassment and reluctantly

www.pathagar.com

found her way back to the house. From the yard I saw her watching us through the window.

After a few minutes she came out with a glass of water, which she offered to Abdul Ali. He returned the glass to her after drinking the water and looked at the body in the yard. 'I work with Moina Mia MP,' he said. 'I'll send someone with a van to clear out your yard. You don't have to pay anything. Thank you for the water.'

The woman's eyes filled with tears. Her lips trembled. She gathered the ends of her sari and covered her mouth.

www.pathagar.com

8

Today for Tomorrow

We had left the crowd only a few yards behind, when a young boy—at best fourteen years old—came running to us. He needed a few seconds to collect himself before speaking. He lived in this neighbourhood, he said, and to be more specific, mentioned the holding number of the house. '36A Jagadish Road, just behind the market; the third hoarding from the ditch where they throw remains of animals.'

'I know where it is,' Abdul Ali said clearly. 'What can I do for you?'

The boy hesitated a moment, then said there was no need to send a van to remove the woman's body, he would do it himself.

'I will clear up the area, scrub the floor and the walls, disperse the crowd, make it like nothing has happened there; give me only two hours.'

Abdul Ali looked at me with concern before saying: 'Why do you want to do that?'

The answer was ready on the boy's lips. 'Because I live here and it is my right. Before you send someone to work in this neighbourhood you may want to enquire if we are available. Pay me what you would have paid the van driver.'

I wanted to reach Moina Mia's house as soon as possible and so did not want to be bothered. The woman's suicide had already delayed our meeting considerably. I pulled Abdul Ali by the shoulder, but he did not move even an inch. On the other hand, I noticed, the boy sounded very tough and determined.

'You are too young for this job,' Abdul Ali said.

'But I have experience,' the boy replied. 'Since the beginning of the famine I have removed thirty-four bodies. Women, children, grown-ups, I don't care. Bodies are bodies, aren't they? I am strong and I love the famine.'

www.pathagar.com

'It may be a homicide,' I said to Abdul Ali. I wanted to scare him. I wanted him to come with me and come quickly. I could not wait. 'Who knows who was with the woman on the roof. A body may not be as simple as it looks. We need someone who is mature and who understands how sensitive the situation is. Besides, if you think about the law of the country, the body may also have to be taken to the police station for an autopsy and investigation.'

The boy continued talking with Abdul Ali in the same manner, as if he had not heard me. When he asked Abdul Ali how much he was planning to pay the van driver for the job, I spoke again, louder this time: 'Don't you listen to the little devil, Ali bhai; this can be a never-ending issue and can even damage your relations with Moina Mia, making you lose your job in the end. I don't know why you are wasting your time with him.'

'Who is this man?' the boy said resentfully, with his eyes on me. 'Is he a newcomer in this country? Does he know there is no homicide, slaughter or disappearance here at the moment, only death, very ordinary, raw, uncomplicated death? Does he know I have come to seek your permission only out of courtesy and I will do whatever I find suitable in this case to help myself?'

Abdul Ali wanted to say something, but I pulled him aside saying I would deal with the matter and stood with the boy face to face. The boy was thin and undersized, and I believed it would not need more than a blow to shut him up for the day. 'And what do you think is suitable?' I asked instantly. 'Give me an example, please. I want to enlighten myself with your experience.' He looked up at me with the same anger. 'Say honestly how many bodies you have buried—one, two, three, none?'

Finding him silent, I kicked him in the leg, to which he reacted only by taking a step back, bending to touch his knee, his face squeezing in pain. He was terrified. I asked him again if he was still willing to remove the woman's body from the yard. 'My darling, my little darling, speak up. Don't limp, raise your head, close your fist and smack me in the face.' When he did not respond, I grabbed his hair, swung him from side to side a few times and then let him go. Abdul Ali did not have much strength in his legs, but he came to rescue the boy. 'Khaleque sahib!' he said and tried to cover the boy

www.pathagar.com

with his body. I followed him, ran around him and kicked the boy again. 'Please,' the boy cried into the dust, 'don't hit me. Don't hit me. I just wanted to do something to earn money. It did not matter if it involved burying a body. I have half of my family dead and the other half starving.' Though I had controlled myself to some extent by that time, I still yelled at him. 'Tell me, have you carried any bodies before,' I said, 'or I'll break your spine. Tell me the truth.'

'O God!' he said, while collecting himself under my gaze. 'I have not. O God!'

Soon his cries became louder. His body shook as he drew in every breath with visible difficulty.

Abdul Ali squeezed a one-taka note into his pocket and pushed me towards the road.

'What is this world, Khaleque bhai?' Abdul Ali asked as we proceeded through the neighbourhood.

He walked beside me, holding my arm. He wiped his nose with a handkerchief I had given him.

'What is this time, this circle of seasons, this turn of years, this vanishing light and this insignificant but inviolable conflict between life and death? What is this that we see and cannot react to, that we perceive and cannot explain, that we repeat and yet cannot recollect? Tell me, if you know; tell me today; tell me when this is coming to an end. I do not believe in premonitions but I'll believe today. Tell me anything; I'll believe you.'

I was now at least two hours late for my meeting with Moina Mia. What excuse would I give him? That someone fell asleep on the sofa and I saw a death on the road? Those would only prove that I was not sufficiently careful about my responsibility.

'If you hold on to me like this,' I said to Abdul Ali, 'I cannot walk. You're too heavy for me to carry all the way; you're too dejected; too preoccupied to let me speak; and too immature to understand anything.' I pulled my hand away. 'Walk by yourself, please. This day says nothing more different to me than to you. This day says: look ahead; this suicide did not happen; this blood you saw was only the juice of the earth; this woman was a mirage; this boy was a ghost. Walk straight, go home, sleep, wake up, walk straight, look ahead.'

www.pathagar.com

'Why wasn't walking yesterday enough for today? Why won't walking today be enough for tomorrow? Why walk then, if walking doesn't count?'

'Walking is always for tomorrow; yesterday's walk, today's walk, tomorrow's walk—all for tomorrow. That is what this world is. Such are the times. Don't come close to me; walk apart; behind me or before me. Walk fast, like the wind. I am walking now, for tomorrow; I am thinking now, for tomorrow. I am now going to stun myself, for tomorrow and tomorrow and tomorrow.'

He stopped talking. He stopped walking, pressed his chest and fell to the ground. 'Come, hit me,' he said. 'You hit the boy, hit me.'

'Not now,' I said, as I ran towards him. 'Not now. Kill me if you want to kill me. But we have no time for this. We have to go.' I shook him by the shoulder, by the head, slapped him.

'I am tired,' he managed to say.

'On your feet!' I screamed. 'On your feet!' I dragged him a few steps in the dust, a pain growing in my armpit, my legs feeling heavy, like the legs of an elephant; then raised him on to my shoulder and ran towards Moina Mia's mansion.

www.pathagar.com

9

A Long Talk, a Win

Moina Mia said he had new information for us; it was about our pre-programme orientation. We would have to stay with the militia for a couple of days at a campsite where we would be taught how to handle small arms. There might be someone who would want to kidnap us to embarrass Sheikh Mujib. If we were trained in arms, we would be able to protect ourselves.

'The price,' I said to him. 'Before we begin discussing subsidiary matters like unseen terror lurking in the dark and effective use of handguns, the price has to be reviewed.' Though the nature of our work had not changed, I argued, its conditions had changed fundamentally. To give an example, Nur Hussain would have to memorize new passages for every new assignment. So far he had delivered only what he had already learnt. Now, suddenly, he would have to deliver something different. If learning were easy for him, he would not have been a speaker. He would have found a job with a bank or insurance company, many of them sprouting up after the war. He would have been a bus conductor or a mechanic, a weaver, at least. Therefore, learning new passages would not be easy for him.

I also explained that every time new passages would be written they would be written in a style different from Sheikh Mujib's, because they would not be written by him but by someone else for him; most probably by a tricky speechwriter who used words as weapons. Those words would not be simple either. The language of rebellion is simple whereas the language of governance is very intricate. Rebellion needs one small sentence—a slogan. But being the government, Sheikh Mujib would have to find a language that would highlight his achievements and conceal his limitations as an administrator.

Then I spoke about myself. The new schedule would place extra

www.pathagar.com

pressure on me too, I said. How? I was the one who would have to read the passages to him, since Nur Hussain's capacity to read was limited and his understanding was extremely erratic. Moina Mia or Sheikh Mujib or the militia would not sit with him in the dim circuit house room to observe what part of the speech he had missed or improvised. I did not mind doing something for Sheikh Mujib; in fact, I would enjoy doing it. But it would help me explain things to Nur Hussain logically if I could say that his payment demanded that kind of hard work or even a superior level of commitment, and he could not give up just because he felt annoyed or he did not understand something. Nur Hussain depended on my capacity to explain things to him, I said, which, in turn, effectively depended on how comfortable I felt about performing my part of the job.

That was not all, I said, as I began the second part of my argument. Now that we would be working for Sheikh Mujib, I told Moina Mia most dutifully, we would not be able to avoid people—people of all kinds, especially from the media—who would follow us virtually everywhere.

They might also want to write a photo-essay on his daily life, I argued; after all, he was the only person who Sheikh Mujib had selected to deliver his speech. It would not be an advantage for Moina Mia or for Sheikh Mujib to let people know we lived in a small flat. Important people live in important places: I made it clear to him. If we wanted to move to a place of average importance, we would have to pay a rent higher than we now paid. Even if we moved to an important house, I said, we would need to keep a gatekeeper who would keep trouble away. We would have to employ someone like Ruhul Amin who was brave enough to shoot trespassers.

If earning money required talking, I was ready to talk. I wanted to push our deal as hard as possible. Being an MP was not easy. Being a speaker for a troubled prime minister was not easy either. Moina Mia had to know it.

His eyes became small. He stared at me as if he had never seen me before. The creases on of his forehead became deeper.

I managed to clear a generous advance from him, in cash. And it came directly from the bank. Newly printed bills—they smelt wonderful.

www.pathagar.com

The advance was a token of our trust for each other, I said to him as a concluding statement. By taking that money I had given him my word. I was not going to do another deal with another person. Not even if I were offered a better deal and the deal came from an Awami League leader, as every leader needed to do some propaganda during such a deep crisis. Money was not everything, I told him, but my word was my word, and he and I were both gentlemen with our honour to protect.

I did not care what ideas he had of me. Was he concerned about what ideas I had formed about him? Did he know I knew exactly who the two burglars were that Ruhul Amin had shot the other night? Did he know that I knew they were Basu and Gesu—the two servants who had served us tea in his house—and that I did not speak about their unfortunate death with him simply because he did not speak about them with me? Two men just disappeared, two men wearing Mujib coats. They disappeared while stealing from their employer. They disappeared even though they did not steal jewellery, money, legal documents, state secrets or any valuable items, but only two sacks of rice. He had his way of exploiting a situation, I had my own.

I felt good about myself. In fact, I was extremely delighted to see my plan actually work the way I had hoped it would. Now I would not have to go to the editors looking for a job. Now they would not be able to look down upon me any more and dismiss me as a trivial subject even after I had knocked them with an interesting point like transformational leadership and how it applied to our nation. My feet were stable now, and my grip firm. I had Moina Mia in my pocket. I had Sheikh Mujib under my control. Because of the Mujib coat I wore, I had the entire Awami League carrying out my wishes.

www.pathagar.com

10

The Sweet Taste of the Unknown

That night, I remembered my father.

He was a small trader dealing in ginger. 'You will be a seller like me,' he had told me one day, as we sat on a mat in the crowded village market, spreading his little inventory next to our feet. 'How old are you—six, seven? I want you to know the twelve different tastes of ginger before you cross fifteen, so that when I am no more, you can carry on without trouble.'

He gave me a piece of ginger to taste. It was dry but very strong, and I had tears in my eyes within seconds.

He laughed and showed my tearful face to his friends. 'This is how you know ginger,' he then said. 'By mingling it with your life. There is no other way.' He gave me another piece to chew, this time a fresh root. 'But don't worry, soon you will feel better. Before you have gone to bed tonight, you will think you know a part of the Big Secret of the World. You will say: I have seen it—I know how awful it can taste. A piece of ginger is not an object of fear for you any more.'

Before he died, a few years later, he had advised my mother to grow ginger upon his grave. 'At least six columns of them. Loosen the soil before watering. Make a fence around to stop goats. Collect the ginger and dry them before they rot in flood water.'

When the early showers came, and the earth became moist and fine, we saw a dense clump of ginger plants swinging in the evening sun.

My mother died two years after him. She always said she had suffered in her life with my father. There was a chance that she would finally be free after his death. She would begin again. Surprisingly, she decided not to. She could not resist his loud call from the grave. I saw her thin arms getting thinner, her bloodless face getting ethereal. She walked as slow as an earthworm in her last few days, though her memory worked perfectly.

www.pathagar.com

She left a basket for me. Wrapped with an embroidered quilt, it was full of dry ginger chunks, some sour, some sweet, some hot and spicy, some as hard as beef strips.

I threw away her coconut broom, saris, wooden shoes and utensils, and along with them the basket, into the ditch.

I hated my father, as I grew up. I didn't know why. Probably I thought he wanted to imprison me to the kind of life he knew while I wanted more. Or because I thought if I did not hate the life that he introduced me to, I could not embrace another life. Whatever, I did not return to the village I had left behind. I stood before my mother's grave for a few minutes only, and prayed: 'Let me go, let me go, let me go.' Then I did what I thought was good for me. I moved on. My education, creativity, writing, communication and negotiation skills—all came through hard work, and at this moment, my life was not where it had been a year ago. It was not even where it was yesterday, full of hesitation and confusion. I was now in a situation which was larger than my normal life would have allowed.

I stood at the window and looked at the city. It was sleeping under a dark cloud. Small tin sheds looked like deep, bottomless tombs, cursed and silenced to the last heartbeat under the constant torture of time. The old streets lay in darkness, like dry veins in a body, never to wake again, never to be filled with human voices and footsteps. It was noiseless everywhere, except for the howls of some angry cats at the crossroads, and a cricket calling incessantly from the bush.

It proved to be mysterious, very mysterious, to me, this city. I had lived here for over two decades now. My thoughts were formed here, and my ability to fight for my place in it evolved under its very direction. Day after day I collected the necessary information about it; names of its different areas penetrated my memory not to be lost in a lifetime. I was not sports-minded, but I had gone to the stadium once or twice to watch football matches with forty thousand other spectators who jumped in excitement or cried in frustration with every goal. Then there were the processions, the days of general strikes, throwing stones at government buildings, singing in praise of the motherland on days of historical significance, wearing clothes suited to the mood of the season, soaking in the monsoon. That was the city I knew, not the one that lay before me.

www.pathagar.com

'But I know what to do,' I thought. I had come to understand that the unknown was not the problem—the problem was the known, the world in memory. The known had changed; it had changed so drastically that I found myself on the street, fighting over an overchewed bone like a hungry dog. It was ruthless; it shattered my pride as an individual, and placed me under the weight of a life without course.

In contrast, the unknown stopped before me most compassionately, smiled at me elegantly, cleaned me up, received me into its breast, gave me ambition and dreams, and was ready to walk every step with me.

I would go with it, I said to myself. I was not my father who would find his future in a small ginger bag. I would walk into the unknown with confidence and hope and create a life without memory, without the sense of loss and anguish. And I would keep walking right up to the end.

www.pathagar.com

11

The Eyes of God

The next day I appeared at Moina Mia's gate, but not to meet Moina Mia. 'Take me to that building,' I said to Abdul Ali, who met me at the gate, and who appeared to have shed some of his lethargy by that time.

'Which building?' he asked. 'Are you going for a walk somewhere?' He had not forgotten our conversation about walking the other day.

'The one they are constructing. The one that is five storeys now. I want to see something.'

'Of course,' he said. 'Please follow me.' We crossed the yard, the fountain, the fence, and took a passage strewn with bricks and wood planks. 'Where in the house do you want to go exactly?' he asked.

'Anywhere,' I replied, but instantly added, 'take me to the sitting room, please; I've heard a lot about it from workers. I heard that it was exceptionally spacious and gave the house a special character rarely seen in Bengali houses.' He said it was designed to accommodate at least one hundred guests at its long dining table. 'One hundred guests?' I asked. 'Why so many?'

'Why do you say that, Khaleque bhai?' he replied. 'This is a man who knows what he is going to need in the next fifty or sixty years. A very practical man. He knows what a big house can signify when you are a political leader. People want to see you own something as precious so that they are assured that you are not going to steal from them. The richer the leader, the more respected he is.'

'He's not planning to hold party meetings in his sitting room, is he?'

'This man will grow old gradually, like we all will; when he grows old, he won't want to go to the party conference room for every little meeting. He would rather bring the party to his home and have the meetings right here. Imagine a day when this yard will be crowded

www.pathagar.com

with hundreds of leaders of the country. They will compete with each other, argue with each other, insult each other, throw shoes, leather bags, teacups, microphones and chairs at each other, break each other's necks and determination, and then, at the end of the day, shamelessly compromise with each other for the sake of the party, and on the order of the leader.'

'This is what he said to you?' I asked.

He smiled. 'No, he did not. This is what I thought would happen. Based on my experience, I can predict some of the developments in the political culture of our country.'

We entered the sitting-room. The doors and the windows had not been fixed; the floor was littered with blue plastic sheets, cement bags and paint containers. The smell of brick and sand was thick in the air. I went to the corner opposite the door and looked back.

The way Nur Hussain and I were advancing now, coupled with the opportunities that might come along very soon thanks to the prestige of working for Sheikh Mujib, I thought, it would not be unwise to think that before another election came we would have everything we needed. With my part of the money, I believed I would be able to build myself a multi-storeyed French-style Gothic mansion spanning twenty-five acres right in this city, which would have a much wider lounge than this. I would buy a beautifully crafted Barbadian Heritage mahogany cot to sleep on, a Regency-style revolving dining table and sideboard to eat food, a set of magnificent Four Seasons English Oak Breakfront bookcases for the lounge, and a 680 kg Holstein-Friesian black-and-white cow for milk. In time, and that would be before I turned forty-five, I would find myself a luscious Puerto Rican wife with pretty, plump hips, similar to the one I had seen on the cover of a travel magazine, a woman with youth, mystery, sensuousness and femininity. There would be a white Latvian guard dog at my door and a doorkeeper with a handlebar moustache from Bihar to protect me. These were not unnecessary luxuries. A man with taste and a sense of adventure needed them badly. A man who did not have them could not declare himself successful, happy and free.

'It isn't as spacious as I believed it would be,' I said to Abdul Ali. 'They gave me wrong information, I see.'

www.pathagar.com

He agreed and walked towards the centre of the room. 'He wanted to make it more spacious than this,' he said.

I looked at the backyard through the window. 'Why didn't he? I can see there is still a big plot left.'

'He wanted to go higher as soon as possible.'

I was confused. 'What do you mean by higher?'

'You must have noticed in the last one year or two,' he said, 'there is a common inertia in the country; there is only destruction. This building, along with some others of the same category, will change that. They will be considered symbols of activity and progress, for wherever in the city you go, you'll be able to see them from your window.'

I looked at his eyes. 'This is what he said to you?'

'Yes, he did,' he said thoughtfully. 'This and more.'

'What more? Is he going to construct another building behind it?'

'No, nothing like that. He said this building would go higher as the famine went deeper. It would stop only when the famine was over.'

I turned myself away from him. Suddenly I did not like the tone of his voice. In fact, I felt quite unprepared for having this conversation with him. He was complaining and I should not have taken him into my confidence. If he was unhappy with his employer, which was obvious at this moment, I thought, he might be unhappy with me as well, for having a good relationship with him. Though he did not show any sign of that, rather he took me as a friend to whom he could reveal the secret plans of his employer, I thought it was better for me to maintain my distance from him.

He stood at the back window and spoke with an ironworker welding outside. There was small laughter, exchange of information between them. Upon his request, the worker tightened a screw on the window grille with his wrench. Abdul Ali checked the screw to see if it was rightly fixed. 'Someone must inspect all the screws before the painting job begins.' He said. 'We don't want any hazard to remain unattended. Not a single one.' The worker agreed.

'Shall we leave?' I asked after a while.

He nodded. 'Sure, if you think you've already seen what you wanted to see.'

www.pathagar.com

'I am done. At least for the time being.'

As we walked towards the door, I said, 'I hope I get a chance to come to this building again, when the construction work is complete. I would like to look at the city from its topmost window. It must look beautiful from there, very beautiful, especially on a day when there is no dust or fog around and the sky is blue. It would be like looking at the world through the eyes of God.'

He stopped, stared long at me and then suddenly smiled. 'You'll have that chance, Khaleque bhai, I'm sure.' He passed me and looked back. 'Just pray that the famine stays here long, so that we have a very tall building. The taller the building, the better the view.'

www.pathagar.com

12

The Screw Eater

As we crossed the door and stepped into the main hall, I heard some laughter coming from a room on the right-hand side. The door of the room was locked. When we came to this building, just minutes ago, I had not heard anyone there, and I had not seen anyone come down the staircase. I would have overlooked the matter if the laughter had not turned into an intensive coughing fit. Someone was choking in there.

I looked at Abdul Ali enquiringly. 'You don't want to see this, Khaleque bhai,' he said, sadder than he had been before. 'You really don't want to see this.' He came back to me and pulled me by my hand towards the fence. 'I am surprised that he lingered so long. He was not supposed to, judging by the way he was when I last saw him.'

I pulled him back. 'Why don't you tell me what's happening here. What's the problem?'

'Don't worry,' he said. 'He'll be silent soon. Just give him a few more hours.'

The coughing became deadlier now, and then stopped, and turned into laughter.

'Who'll be silent soon?' I asked him. 'Who's there?' Abdul Ali began to walk away but I said I would not leave until he had opened that door for me.

'You're very stubborn,' he said. 'Very stubborn and sensitive. A handful of trouble. Not like the man I thought you would be.' He returned and reluctantly opened the door with a key from his key ring. 'You go in, I'm not coming with you; it isn't going to be a pretty scene, I can tell you that,' he said, but followed me slowly when I stepped inside.

There was a small middle-aged man there, bound to a chair. He had blood coming out of his mouth. There was blood on his naked

www.pathagar.com

chest and on the lungi at his waist. He felt shy seeing us and kept looking at the ground.

'Don't ask me anything,' Abdul Ali said. 'I know nothing.' But when I insisted, he opened his mouth.

Construction workers had caught this man last evening. They had their building materials in a van parked outside the gate. This man came from nowhere and started eating tiny iron screws from a box. When they chased him he started gobbling those shiny screws faster than before. His throat was jammed; so they brought him within the boundary and hit his jaw to release the screws. Then they used a knife to prise open his teeth. They removed some of the screws while most of them went down his throat. Upon the instruction of Moina Mia, he was bound to a chair and left in the building for the night.

'The end of the world is here,' said Abdul Ali. 'When men become too powerful, God stops thinking. What can we do? Look at him. Look at his face. See how he smiles, how he enjoys the last few moments of his life, as if he is his God and he has unearthed the final secret of his life. I don't think anything human is left in that face.'

The man raised his head. He quietly observed us. He had no complaint about being bound, I imagined. There was no sign that he would be grateful to us if we volunteered to untie him.

'*Bhaijan, mone kichhu koiren na; boro bhok lagchhilo, ja paichhi khaichhi,*' he said, without any visible distress. *My brother, don't take it too hard; I was very hungry and I ate whatever I found.* 'It was not meant to be dramatic. I'm not a thief. I'm not mean. You see, I couldn't stand on my feet only because my stomach was empty. It had been dry and light for quite some time. I ate from the workers' lunch but soon realized I needed to have something heavy in my stomach, something heavier than regular rice and egg and potato and milk. I did not want to go to bed only to wake up a hungry man in the morning.' He coughed and spat blood on the floor. Then he smiled. 'I can tell you this: those screws were really delicious. They were exactly what I needed. You can imagine, if I don't have anything to eat for the rest of my life, I will still be able to stand straight and walk tall and pass a beautiful evening watching a sunset over the Buriganga.' He lowered his head to get a view of his stomach. 'God knows I'm feeling so good now; I'm feeling wonderful since last evening. This is

www.pathagar.com

blood, I know, and I am coughing, I know that too, which may sound terrible to you, but believe me when I say there's no pain in my stomach. It is all quiet now; I've satisfied it for a long time to come.' He blushed for a brief moment; but then the coughing began again, twisting his thin body, and more blood came.

'I can't believe this is happening,' I said. 'I can't believe you have bound him to a chair instead of cleaning his stomach.' I took a step forward to release the man, but Abdul Ali stopped me. 'Don't, don't,' he cried. 'You can't help him. Nobody can help him. He is not any more in the land of men. Those screws were sharp. I guess they've already cut through his stomach. They'll cut everything as far as they go and as deep as they go, unravelling all his mysteries. Relax now; he's done; no sympathy is necessary. He's done and he knows it. That's why he doesn't care, don't you see it? Let him enjoy his peace.'

Hearing this, the man smiled at us before lowering his eyes once again.

That was his last smile that day and forever.

Abdul Ali released the rope. The body fell from the chair with barely any noise.

'So this is what famine does to a person,' I thought as I walked back home. 'It does not bring one to his knees only; it eats one alive. It is hungrier than a hungry man.'

My confidence was shaken. I could not stop staring at people on the way. Most men and children were not wearing shirts. Their scrawny stomachs, determined to expose their ribs, looked ugly in the beginning, but then when I thought about a stomach with dozens of sharp screws in it, they appeared beautiful. They were real; beyond enigma. They shone in the daylight, every one of them, though I knew they were empty or half-empty, or dry, as the man had so compulsively said.

'Images are everywhere,' I said to myself, as I entered the gravel yard. 'Live, concrete images that cannot be misinterpreted or denied or eliminated or undermined. They are dancing and lustfully winking at you. They do not believe in a man's capacity for idling. They are sharp. They love blood. There is no good or evil in the world. Only images. Learn, Khaleque Biswas, learn; learn and face the truth. Do a

www.pathagar.com

necessary service to yourself. Or this is your fate, this sickening trap, this absolute dark, this moment of never coming back, this irrational game of unconditional, slow but certain disappearance. You will break. Choose before it is too late; choose. Set a goal. Set another goal beyond that goal. It isn't time to be gentle and contemplative or likeable or to wander without purpose. It isn't time to be innocent. The famine has shot a dart aimed at you. Learn and live.'

www.pathagar.com

13

My Fear

For obvious reasons, I was compelled to be more attentive to what I was doing. I needed to evaluate and re-evaluate my present position in terms of the deal. I needed to identify my weaknesses before they broke me down. I was doing fine, I thought, except for one fundamental problem. And I needed to attend to it more seriously.

I must recognize that I had fears about Nur Hussain. True, he had consistently maintained his silence when it came to our business; he had not argued or contradicted me over payment; and I had enjoyed his loyalty throughout; but at this critical point I really needed to know who he was, what he was thinking, what his plans were for the future, so that I could trust him or suspect him or at least keep him within reason. I wanted to know how I must adjust to him for the sake of survival or make him understand why he must adjust to me for the sake of a meaningful future. Considering all our previous conversations, our meals together, our experiences of working together, and considering every thread of communication we had had, I found that I still did not know him.

His loyalty to me might come from his helplessness. He was nothing without me. He was one of the millions of lost young boys who would end their lives pushing bullock carts in busy waste management centres. His loyalty might come from the fact that he was sent to me by Raihan Talukder. If Nur Hussain did not respect me, it would mean he had no respect for Raihan Talukder either. As long as Raihan Talukder was alive, and Nur Hussain needed to return to the village, he could not harbour any disregard for me. If he did, he would disobey the conventional system of respect.

Wouldn't he be a different person—egocentric, incomprehensible, impertinent—once he knew he was not dependent on me, at least as much as he thought he was? What would happen if someone like me—or smarter—came forward and offered him the services that I

www.pathagar.com

offered him in exchange for a more lucrative deal? He did not seem to know what money was; he did not ask how much money he had earned, or how much money I had earned because of him, or even how much his talent was worth. Someone could explain to him what extraordinarily beautiful and momentous things he could do if he were more organized in his life or worked with more self-confidence in his profession. Someone could easily lay out his future—in the flash of an eye. It might also happen that one day he would disappear; just disappear, without a word or message or address. What would I do? I would look for him everywhere: at the market, at the tea stalls, in the refugee camps, throughout the city of Dhaka, in Gangasagar, and still not find him. What would I do then?

I walked in the street harbouring such deep but silent vexations. I walked for a long time, passing the stinky surroundings of the meat-sellers, the dried-up well in the market, the laundry house with its coal-heated iron. When the tailor, who had made Nur Hussain's Mujib coat, waved at me from his door, I moved on without waving back. At the corner of the road, where the council had placed a massive garbage bin, two beggars blocked my way and extended their tin plates. They did not speak a word, not even when I pushed them to the ground, and threw their plates aside. No, I did not look back. The beggars would not come after me, I knew that; they were too tired to attack anyone and used to being assaulted and beaten regularly.

When I felt worn out, and thought I could not take even one more step, and could not speak a word, good or bad, I found myself on the premises of the Mrittunjoyee school. I sat on the veranda, where Abdul Karim had once given me peanuts to eat, looking at the sea of tents before me. I felt disgusted by the human cries coming from the passages criss-crossing the field. There were people everywhere, standing idly or sitting on the ground like corpses, quarrelling, fighting, chasing or cursing one another. At least two dozen children had crowded at the corner of the field where there was a mountain of garbage. This was garbage from the tents, from people who would throw their babies away before throwing away food, but the children turned upside down every piece of dirt, every can, every bottle, looking for treasures.

www.pathagar.com

Then there was the woman right before me, who fell to the dust in a feverish hallucination to express her sorrow at the loss of her son, drawing a large crowd around her. She looked like a spectre of evil, a creepy amputated monkey jumping to burn itself while loudly cursing its most unavoidable misfortune. I wanted to run there and hit her on the head to relieve her of her unendurable pain. Any person feeling so overwhelmed with hardship had no right to exist. The famine is a time for the able and the strong-willed, I thought. It is a time for the intelligent to reign. They will introduce new ways of life. They will make their own laws to protect themselves from non-existence, the way I have found my own path. They will create a religion of their own, if necessary, which will define success and morality in a completely different language. The famine will set apart the fit from the weak-hearted.

It is not mandatory, I thought, that a society must have people who are vile and who rear filthiness instead of grit and ambition. What will these people do with themselves, if suddenly this field before me turns into a beautiful mansion, and all the tents beautiful suites, and the heap of garbage a dining table with plenty of delicious food and drinks? I could not imagine a different scenario: they would still find something to condemn in one another, chase one another and cancel one another out. All the able and intelligent men in the country, people who are creative and do not surrender to the demands of hungry stomachs, should rush to this camp at this very moment to burn these tents down, to peel the skin off these shameless human animals. Sheikh Mujib should pass the necessary orders to his militiamen to dig a deep trench to bury all the faint-hearted people alive, thus ushering in a new era for the intelligent to grow up with beautiful minds, and help advance this country. It does not matter how many unfit ones are buried to nurture the fit ones; those who cannot fight for a sustainable existence should perish without mercy.

Sheikh Mujib was right to turn a blind eye to these people who insulted the human spirit so extravagantly, I said to myself as I walked out of the school premises. He was right to block the images of death from the media. If it were not for him, more people would have died watching those images than from the famine. If they would not be dead, they would be blind or infertile or eternally beyond control and correction.

www.pathagar.com

As I came closer to the tea stall, I saw a man crawling after a shiny coin thrown two yards away by another man. He had gangrene in both his legs. Repulsed by the stink from his sweaty body, I went inside the stall, and looked back only to find that the second man was engaged in a game with the crawling man. He turned out his pocket to show he had plenty of coins there, and the gangrened man could win them all if he was ready to please him by crawling. The man crawled once again and the crowd around clapped at him.

Though he won't walk again, I thought, this man is more transparent than Nur Hussain; more readable and considerate. This man is trying to live; reaching for every coin makes his face brighter and his desire to crawl stronger. He is doing exactly what he needs to do at this moment: exercising his right to degrade himself, and to enter a voluntary madness for the sake of a stable tomorrow. Suffering is not an other-worldly affair; it will never be that a person won't be able to unearth the mystery of his suffering in his lifetime. This man is not acting like a phantom, accusing metaphysical molesters and creatures of the shadow world of working against him. It is better to be mad than dark. He is doing the impossible, I thought; he is a human jewel in a heap of human rubble.

By contrast, I thought with utter frustration, Nur Hussain did not say anything about himself; he did not say how engaged or disengaged he was to and from his commitment with me. For the sake of his gratitude to me for everything he now had, he could have opened himself up to me once in a while, and taken it as his solemn responsibility to tell me he had no rage against me and I would not need to growl or bark at him to know his mind. He was killing me with his silence. He was insulting me with his lack of distress, his imperceptible rashness. If I had a prison of my own, I thought, I would surely have locked him up with the Taiwanese lock. I would have brought him out when I needed him to speak for Sheikh Mujib. I would have starved him of food, of sleep, of conversation, of all human contact, if he had refused to deliver his speeches. I would have beaten him up morning and evening until he gave in, until he learnt to refuse to admit he was in pain when in severe pain, until he had licked my shoes more abjectly than Basu and Gesu took the dust of his feet to their chest, until he had served me with the last drop of blood in his body.

www.pathagar.com

The truth was I did not have any such prison, and he was a citizen of a free country as much as I was. If he decided to create fences around himself, he could do that. I only hoped he would not.

'It's a gift from me,' I said, placing the box before him. It seemed my only option was to make an effort to enter his imagination. 'A simple thing, not very expensive; looked beautiful on the shelf.' He was going to speak for Sheikh Mujib; nothing could be more delightful for us. 'We must celebrate the moment. We must celebrate our success.'

He did not ask what I had in the box. So I sat on the sofa and told him to open it and see. He opened the box indifferently, put the pair of black shoes on the floor, next to his feet. He thought his old pair was good enough, he said. Weren't they?

'Try them,' I said, instead of answering. 'Don't be so serious now. See if they fit you.'

He tried only one shoe, the right one, and took a few steps.

'Any good?' I asked. 'If not, we can return them.'

He looked at me. I could not read exactly what he had in his eyes. They were impenetrable.

www.pathagar.com

14

Nur Hussain Puts on Rags

Our first speaking engagement for Sheikh Mujib was yet to be scheduled. We were to look for a new house, well protected with high boundary walls like I had described to Moina Mia, and with enough space and furniture for our new life together, although I still didn't really know Nur Hussain either as a person or as an accomplice.

Within a couple of days I no longer saw the new pair of shoes on his feet or anywhere in the flat. I did not see the pair I had bought him when he first started delivering the speech. He was using the ones he had arrived in from Gangasagar—the dark red rubber sandals with blue laces.

Had he donated the shoes to someone? Everything could be sold at such a time: blood, bones, organs, babies, virginity, honesty, everything. A pair of shoes would be one of the more sophisticated items. They had more market value than the newly printed Constitution of the country. Shoes could be sold and resold, unlike a Constitution.

I would buy him another pair, I said to myself. It was only a pair of shoes. Not a huge loss. Probably he did not like the colour, and he could not tell me he did not, for the sake of keeping me happy and satisfied. Probably they did not fit him properly. He knew it the moment he opened the box, which was why he hadn't even tried on both shoes; he had tried on only one. Next time I would take him to the store when I bought his shoes so that he could choose the pair he liked. A man should have the right to choose his own shoes.

The following day I did not see the bed sheet on his bed. I asked him where it was, if he had soaked it in soapy water to wash later, though I had already checked every corner of the flat, including the toilet. The buckets were empty. The soap was in its place.

I could be stubborn, but this was a time when I wanted to be

www.pathagar.com

stubborn with him the least. It might cost me dearly. My stubbornness could cause him to leave me. It might begin with something as simple as a conversation about a pair of shoes and then take the shape of a yes–no question about the deal. He might say he did not want to be under anybody's thumb; he did not want to deliver the speech, not even if Sheikh Mujib himself stood before him begging. Was it his problem that the country had fallen into disarray? If Sheikh Mujib suffered for his own faults, nobody could save him.

I asked if he had thrown the bed sheet away because it was old. He knew we could do lots of things with such a bed sheet; we could use it for darning the quilt, cut it into pieces to create rags, and at the very least, use it as a kitchen curtain. But it was definitely not a big deal, I said; I didn't mind, and I would buy him a new one when I went to the market next time. In fact, I had not done any shopping except for food in the last few months; I should have walked around the flat and made a list of things we needed. Now that we were doing better financially than when we had started, there was no reason for us to keep dragging our old life along. A new life deserves new elements. I would buy him a pair of those high-lustre, super-soft, wrinkle-free satin bed sheets.

Then one day I saw him wash his punjabi and the Mujib coat, dry them and wrap them in paper. I followed him as he left the flat and walked towards the refugee camp, raising dust under his sandals. I walked fast because he walked fast. I stopped when he stopped. Then I saw him handing over the package to an old, dejected refugee. The refugee unpacked the coat and the punjabi and immediately sat at the street corner to sell them while he stood a little apart from him. In a few minutes a customer bought them. The refugee ran towards the nearby grocery with the bills in his hand, and Nur Hussain took the road home. Now he walked slowly—he had all the time in the world. He was satisfied. He had accomplished the most glorious thing humankind could ever think of with his disgustingly small mind.

Within a couple of days he was in his rags—the clothes he had worn when he came from Gangasagar. He looked impoverished. He looked as if he had never spoken in public; never had that loud, inspiring voice; had never been to Sheikh Mujib's residence as his guest. He went out at any time, walked without direction, stood or

www.pathagar.com

sat anywhere hour after hour watching and thinking. A few times I had seen him actually go into the refugee camp, to talk to people he did not know, and to listen to them attentively. A few times I had seen him come back home late, very late, and then lie down in the dark with his soiled feet. He did not ask if there was any progress in terms of our schedules with Sheikh Mujib. He did not bother to check if I was home, if I was well, if I needed anything. When he cooked, he cooked a lot, but did not sit with me to eat. 'I'm not hungry now,' he would say, when I insisted. 'Maybe later.' Then immediately after I had eaten, he would go to the kitchen, take food in a bowl, much more than he could eat, and cover it with a plate. The next thing I knew he was out in the street with the bowl, walking fast, moving towards the refugee camp.

I knew to some extent how he felt. Of course, I did. Anyone who had a human heart knew for sure the inglorious hell we were living in. But, I guess, I did not know how deeply he felt it; how seriously the demoralizing scenes of death had affected him. Had he reached the point of delirium? Would he fail to calm his nerves?

I thought it would be wise for me to participate in some humanitarian activities with him, to go among people to talk about their sufferings instead of preaching in Sheikh Mujib's favour. Just to let him know I was on the same page. These were very unfortunate days for a man with a beautiful mind; I understood that, even though he might notice that I resisted my sense of compassion and refused to encumber myself with other people's burdens.

In the afternoon I took him to the local market. He walked like an apparition; the wind could sweep him away, he was so thin and weightless. I told him he could buy anything he liked to donate. He only had to consider if it was within our means. What our means were, he had to decide for himself. There was no pressure from my side.

We stood on the pavement, next to the electricity pole, and looked. The market was full of food items, fresh and clean, colourful and expensive, exquisite and exclusive; food from local producers and from abroad, from dealers and black marketeers. But what food to choose, I asked. Choosing the right food was one of the most essential matters in this case. Here I briefly spoke about the eating

www.pathagar.com

habits of the starving generation. Did they wait for expensive, delicious food, like those red, succulent strawberries? Did they have any question about where the food came from? In both cases I answered 'no' so that he knew we were not there to spend money for the sake of spending it. We were looking to help as many people as possible—something he wanted, something he badly wanted—while staying within our limited means. We must be more tactical and useful than simply charitable in our effort. We would count every bill as if we were buying something for ourselves.

Finally I said it was not up to us to consider if we were generous or miserly. Individuals like he and I were too insignificant; we would not be able to stop people from dying. The famine was of such a massive scale that without proper administrative intervention the situation could only get aggravated. What was required was an enhancement of security and order. That could not be ensured by leaving people to starve. We could feed people one or two meals. We could feed only a few families, if we spent all the money we had earned. That would not be anything in the midst of such endless desperation. We would buy whatever we could, but if we could not do a lot, we should not be unhappy.

He did not buy anything. He had no money on him. I had the money in my wallet. He followed me as I moved from the grocery to the vegetable market to the restaurant. I bought ten kilos of rice packed in half-kilo paper bags, five kilos of beaten rice, cabbages, potatoes, onions, green chillies, bottles of mustard oil and some samosas. I gave him a bag to carry so that he felt involved. Then we hired a rickshaw to the refugee camp. We did not have to distribute the items; refugees of all ages stumbled upon them as soon as we said they were free. They grabbed the rice, tore at the packages, fought over them, hit each other, and yelled at each other. Cabbages rolled on the ground.

Nur Hussain sat on the rickshaw; saying nothing, touching nothing. His eyes were lowered and moist.

That day he did not go out again. But the next day he did.

www.pathagar.com

15

The Frightening Me

This time he went straight to the Shaheed Minar where he had first delivered the 7 March speech, where Shah Abdul Karim had sung his songs and where starving refugees gathered day and night for nothing. He walked the cement courtyard from end to end watching the undemonstrative crowd in silence. Some refugees had made the place their permanent home. It was better than the camp at the school field. At least the floor was hard and dry, and rainwater did not pool there.

He saw me standing at the corner, ten or so yards away from him, but said nothing. With an uncertain look, he sat down on the cement and hid his face in his palms.

Though he was in his rags, some refugees recognized him. I could clearly hear one of them loudly asking the man sitting next to him if Nur Hussain was the person who used to deliver Sheikh Mujib's speech; if he was the man in the fine punjabi and the Mujib coat they had seen the other day at Moina Mia's meeting. The man took a few steps towards him and watched him, raising his right hand over his eyes, and then looked back. 'He is,' he said.

'Are you sure?' asked the first man, who now stood up and, in league with the second man, moved towards Nur Hussain.

'He is.' He was sure.

I sensed some desperate ferociousness in their attitude. They were plotting something. These hungry people could be really nasty. They did not need a real reason to start a fight.

I ran at them with a thundering warning, telling them to stay away from him. 'You hear me,' I shouted and ran fast, fast, stepping on sleeping refugees, hitting children who played with sticks and plates, undoing corners of several sari tents. I grabbed the two men by their necks just when they were two yards away from him. 'You ill-

www.pathagar.com

begotten bulls,' I said, 'you'll never walk again!' I squeezed them under my arms, pressed their heads to my stomach, and kicked them in their legs while they tried to get free. I pushed one of them down, and kicked him again and again, until his nose bled and he started crying in loud yelps. As the one under my arm gave in, I pushed him towards the other and breathed hard.

Nur Hussain watched the whole affair. Though a large crowd had gathered around us he did not move. Neither did he show any interest or concern. Probably it all happened so fast that he did not know what to do. Probably he felt numb in his body; I made him numb with my arrogance, and he could not do anything but sit calmly. He watched as my two victims pulled each other to their feet and nursed each other as I walked away from the scene of a massive embarrassment.

I was not in my Mujib coat at that time. I was not in my clean, white, neatly pressed punjabi. There had been no time to put them on.

If I had been wearing my coat, I asked myself that night, would I have done what I did? I knew some refugees in the camp had assaulted an Awami League supporter wearing a Mujib coat when he went there to tell them to join Moina Mia's meeting, and I knew members of the private militia arrived there that night and set fire to their tents. I saw the ashes the next day. Some refugees had burns. Some had bruises all over their bodies.

Then I asked why it was that I had not waited until the two men reached him to see what it was they intended to do to him. I could have. I could have waited a little bit, instead of ambushing them. I could have just walked over to them as any reasonable man would, a man who remained composed even in the face of the most serious danger. That way they would have had enough time to reach him before I grabbed them. Then I could have asked them if they had any objections or grievances against him. Thus I would have been able to win their confidence as a mediator. Maybe I would have realized that they had no intention at all. Why didn't I do that, why had I run towards them when I saw he was not running away from them?

Nur Hussain did not return home immediately. He returned when it was late and went straight to his room. I heard him close the door behind him. Then everything was quiet.

www.pathagar.com

Late that night I heard him cough a few times. Then I heard him snore.

It would not be an endless night, I said to myself. There would be a morning for him, a morning with glaring light, giving shape to things. And a morning would begin for me too, within a few hours. Weren't we going to see each other and get on with our regular lives, I asked myself, and forget what had happened today?

www.pathagar.com

16

His Monster Speech

I opened my eyes. I must have slept for several hours, for I could see the white sun through the window and hear the bells of rickshaws from the street below.

I could hear his footsteps. I could hear jumbled sounds of utensils, washing, sweeping. Those small sounds gave me hope. It really was a new day.

He had washed his clothes and put them on the line to dry. He had swept the sitting room, the kitchen, his own room. This was the man I knew. This was the man who cared for himself and for me and for the place we lived in.

I brushed my teeth, went to the kitchen, sat at the breakfast table. He had prepared parata roti and potatoes, eaten half of it, and left the other half for me on a plate. From there, I could hear him practise the 7 March speech. I stopped eating and pricked up my ears to be sure the sound came from his room.

My brothers, he said, then cleared his throat before beginning with *My brothers* again. *I have come before you today with a heavy heart.* He started the way he had always started. The pace was slow, but the old determination was there.

He did not go out for two days. He ate, slept and recited the speech. Sometimes he looked out of the window. But the scenes of the street did not make him desperate to run with bowls of food to the refugee camp, to sell whatever he found near at hand. He did not look absent-minded either. When he kept his mind occupied with the speech, nothing else could enter there. It all depended on what he wanted to do with himself, and how he wanted to deal with the times.

I did not go out either. I cooked for us, but I ate alone. I must give him a comfortable space to think, I said to myself. He needed that

www.pathagar.com

space to recover. By practising the speech he had already begun the process of healing.

Sitting on the bed I read some old copies of the *Freedom Fighter*, which I had read many times before. I read the reports, looked at the pictures, holding the paper up to the light from the window for a better view. Some exaggerations sounded funny. Some details seemed baseless. Some jokes were obscene. Some conclusions appeared extremely hypothetical. They made sense during the war. That was why we wrote them and printed them. But now, looking back, they seemed appalling. They were rubbish. We were not ourselves when we were at war. Something bigger than human reason guided us forward from day to day. It was not always beautiful and adorable.

On the third day I had to go out. We needed groceries. Our kitchen was empty of food. Only a few onions were left. No dal, no vegetable, no protein whatsoever, no cooking oil. I thought I would buy a hilsa fish today. The appetising smell of fried hilsa right from the hot pan would improve his mood. I would also buy some fine rice. The long, thin rice, washed in wax. It was expensive, but famine or no famine, I would buy some, at least a kilo, for his sake. Beyond that, I planned to buy him a punjabi and a coat.

On my way back from the market, I hired a rickshaw to carry the groceries. I sat on the seat, with my feet on the sack. I told the rickshaw-wallah to drive carefully. I specifically advised him to avoid the 'manholes' that could gobble up a man like me easily and suck me into the dark underground sewer in seconds. Plenty of manholes on the streets remained open. The whole country could disappear through them.

We left the main street to enter the neighbouring lane and then came closer to the small market where we would turn right for my flat. Before we did that I thought I saw someone like Nur Hussain walking in the crowd. I told the rickshaw-wallah to slow down so that I could get a closer look at him. He stopped in the shadow of a store.

It was him. He looked around suspiciously as if plotting something, and walked past the confectioner's, the pharmacy and the rickshaw garage, before crossing the opening where every week amateur sellers sold various household items. He was heading to the Shaheed Minar.

www.pathagar.com

The Shaheed Minar area was as crowded as always. A woman had hooked an end of her tattered green sari to the columns of the Minar while draping herself with its other end. The sari flew like a giant flag; its flapping produced the sound of rogue waves in the sea. A few more refugees had moved to the cement yard from the school field. They were raising their tents and setting up their ovens in the sun. A small girl cried, holding her empty tin mug; she cried sitting and then lay down on the cement, crying more shrilly. A man wearing a gamchha around his waist came running—probably her father, smacked her in the face, snatched the mug from her, and thrashed it until it was flat under his feet. A little boy came to her rescue. The man smacked him too. The girl stopped crying. She got to her feet quickly and watched with surprise as the man threw the mug into the small bush behind the Shaheed Minar.

The woman pulled her sari from the columns, and ran to the children. 'You pig,' she said to the man, and gathered the two children in her arms. 'Get lost. Get lost from our lives; or you will see the last of me.'

I was still in the rickshaw. As Nur Hussain moved towards the centre of the yard, walking through the scattered crowd, I watched the surroundings more cautiously. I wanted to be sure nobody ran to attack him. He was man enough to protect himself against any surprise attack; still I felt besieged by my usual sense of insecurity. The Shaheed Minar was a ghostly place today, I could feel it; a place taken by a very powerful force. That was why Nur Hussain had to come back here; that was why more refugees were crowding here, why the small girl cried, the sari flew, the cow dung smelt so heavy. I envisioned something coming, something I had suspected for a long time; a wanton destruction was galloping towards us, gathering speed, getting wider and vaster and raising its head to absorb Nur Hussain's simple mind.

Joy Bangla, he began. He said it twice, enough to draw everyone's attention. The second one was longer than the first. *Joooooooooy Bangla!* Those who recognized him got closer. Among them I saw the two men I had assaulted the other day. They looked meek, like two kids. Those who did not recognize him followed the others. He spoke a few sentences, including: *We have given lots of blood;*

www.pathagar.com

but if it needs more, we are ready to give more. Then he stopped, looked around, giving the crowd time to understand the meaning of those words.

I laughed at myself. How could I think of such abomination! Force, destruction. The seduction of a simple mind. I must have abandoned my own mind somewhere, without knowing it. 'I know nothing about this place. I know nothing about him. I know nothing about these people.'

'Move on now, will you? Come on, let's go home. I've fish in my bag, they will rot,' I said to the rickshaw-wallah. 'Take the shorter route, if you know any. Let's get out of here.' He pushed the rickshaw a few feet backward before dragging it on to the street. Then he rang the bell, seeking a passage through the crowd, and got on the driver's seat. Before his feet had completed a full circle, I heard Nur Hussain speak again.

'My brothers,' he said, in the most memorable tone of the 7 March speech, 'I have stood here many times before. But I have not felt what I am feeling today. Today I can tell you that there is no hope in the words that I have spoken for so long, that they were words unconnected to our lives, to our dreams, our future. Look around you and tell me truthfully: where are all your brothers, your sisters, parents, children and neighbours; where are they, why aren't they here with you now? They were not as lucky as you were because of the famine? No. We have won our luck in the victory in 1971. We have written our claim on hope forever by winning freedom. This is the mistake of one person and one person alone. I have struggled with myself hard but today I can tell you the truth: Sheikh Mujib has become a monster, and as I speak of my emptiness here, he is coming for you.'

www.pathagar.com

17

A Conversation and a Warning

It was late December. Still 1974: a very long year. A year that did not want to end until everything else did.

Refugees who had found no hope in the city began to leave. The ones who decided to stay were adjusting to the new sorrows, new difficulties and new riddles of city life.

I had jumped off the rickshaw, reached Nur Hussain in a few long, swift strides, pushing the crowd aside. I knocked him down immediately by pushing him violently in the chest, and silenced him by shouting louder and shriller than him right in his face. Then I carried him on my back and got him on to the rickshaw. 'Go, go,' I said to the rickshaw-wallah, 'faster, faster. What're you waiting for, you creature?' Several refugees ran behind the rickshaw to see where I was taking Nur Hussain. I looked back and yelled at them. I would kill them, I said; I would break their necks with a lethal blow, if they got any closer.

He was calm. He looked like a small boy, innocent by nature, enriched with an innate ability to overlook danger and threat; a boy who was facing the world for the first time in his life. He had no idea what he had just done. He sat next to me without a fight or an objection or any bitterness, squeezing himself into the corner.

Later that night I explained to him it was no good blaming Sheikh Mujib for all the starvation and death. Nobody in the country was sadder to see people die than him. 'One cannot expect a smart government in a country which does not have smart citizens. Citizens have to know clearly what they want. Our people are shameless. How many directions do we have on earth? Ten. But they will move in any direction they want without bothering about decency and meaning. Seventy million people will talk about seventy million

www.pathagar.com

solutions to the same problem.' If Nur Hussain thought he could not respect Sheikh Mujib because of the famine, he should show some restraint; there were millions and millions of people in the country who respected Sheikh Mujib. He had no right to insult those people. Besides, the new harvesting season had already begun; new crops had appeared in the market, and more food aid had entered the distribution system. A new pricing policy had also been declared to beat inflation, and special measures were taken to tackle corruption. Soon the famine would end. The famine was a test for us to see if we fell apart, if we forgot our solemnity, our pledge to future generations. Unfortunately, we failed that test. But life would not stop here. It would go on.

It was, in fact, my conversation with myself, to speak truthfully, as if I was trying to understand why I was not like him—savage, dangerous, hysterical—why I was frustrated and yet calm, and what strange power occupied my head. Wasn't I more upset than him just months ago? Didn't I ridicule him for being silent and emotionless despite seeing death all around? In the guise of unarming him, I knew I was actually satisfying myself with my own arguments.

He listened attentively, but did not give the faintest sign that he actually accepted anything I had said. It seemed he could stay in the same pose for ages, without moving his feet or hands, without raising his head, without blinking. I stayed with him, softly repeating myself, waiting for his response. There was none.

So it was time I became strict and gave him an either–or choice. He was to speak only what I had taught him to speak, I said clearly; that was the speech, the words of the 7 March speech, with *Joy Bangla* at the end—*Joy Bangla* only once, not twice, to not confuse anyone in the audience. Personal observations and emotions could not come between him and his work. There was a deal and that deal must be honoured as expected.

If he did not do as advised, I warned him distinctly in the end, if he spoke more than what I had allowed him, and dropped something that the speech writers considered important for reinvigorating Sheikh Mujib's personal heroism and the Awami League's image, I would not be able to protect him any longer. Any unforeseen consequences would not be my responsibility.

www.pathagar.com

18

A Reaction, an Overreaction

The next day I was called in for a meeting with Moina Mia.

The news had reached him. It had reached him in its entirety. He knew more than I did. It seemed that Moina Mia had people to inform him exactly what had happened at the Shaheed Minar. Perhaps people like the two militia members with rifles, sitting on two small stools on both sides of the door. I had never seen them before.

In addition to calling Sheikh Mujib a *monster*, Nur Hussain had called him a *disgrace*, Moina Mia told me. Nur Hussain had said Sheikh Mujib was worse than all the Pakistani rulers in our history, because none of them had cost us so many lives. Bangladeshis must gather against him, put him on trial, and sentence him to what he deserved for clinging on to power while the country sank into chaos. Perhaps lifelong imprisonment. That would be his minimum punishment.

Moina Mia asked if I found those words distasteful and if I was aware that Nur Hussain was going to speak like that. Had I noticed any sign or signal that might suggest he was changing from being a supporter of Sheikh Mujib to becoming his brutal critic?

I said no. I had not seen or heard anything objectionable. Whoever had reported the matter to him must have had a pre-planned agenda to condemn Nur Hussain in his eyes. Even the day before the incident I had heard him practise Sheikh Mujib's speech with profound dedication and passion.

Then Moina Mia asked if there wasn't another day, just a few days ago, when I had injured two refugees as they approached Nur Hussain in the same Shaheed Minar. I had hit one of the refugees on the nose, and kicked the other in the stomach. What had made me do so, if I had not thought some danger was approaching, if I had not

www.pathagar.com

believed Nur Hussain was capable of doing or saying something that might turn a whole lot of people into his enemies, including those two refugees? I must have known something about him; I must have observed he was passing through some kind of bizarre delusional period. What was it?

'An overreaction on my part,' I replied. 'Simply a proof of my lack of judgement.' I was mistaken, I told him. I had not thought properly before attacking the refugees. I just wanted to protect Nur Hussain from any harm because I loved Sheikh Mujib and I did not want Nur Hussain harmed just because some refugees had lost their minds. By attacking the two refugees before they harmed Nur Hussain, I was making sure he was available to serve Sheikh Mujib faithfully and completely when the opportunity came.

It was disconcerting, Moina Mia said, very disconcerting indeed, to learn that, first, I believed some refugees had lost their minds and, then, I associated that matter with Sheikh Mujib's leadership. He did not understand why I had brought the two things together to describe a problem, when there was no problem with any of them. Refugees were being regularly fed full meals at various relief centres across the city. Hadn't I seen this? Didn't I watch TV broadcasts which opened and ended with bulletins about how the government was helping the destitute? There were deaths, Sheikh Mujib had acknowledged that. Those deaths were caused by natural calamities. Sheikh Mujib had admitted that too. It was expected that some people would die in the new country because some people always died in a new country. If it was expected, it should not come as a shock. If it was not a shock, why would anyone lose his mind? Why would anyone be so violent as to attack Nur Hussain for delivering Sheikh Mujib's speech?

He was calm. The two militia members stood up. They knew what they were expected to do. They were trained. But he restrained them by looking at them briefly.

'Go down the road,' he said, 'ask a man, any man, young or adult, if he is hungry; give him food, delicious food, give him as much as he can eat, wipe his mouth, leave him to relax, to enjoy a moment of fulfilment, to pray to God in gratitude. Go to him the next moment, the very next moment; ask him again if he is hungry. He is. What did

www.pathagar.com

you expect? He is hungry, terribly hungry, for he has not eaten in a month, in three months, he is so poor—though you can see his hands are still yellow, greasy and smelly, and there are bits of food on his teeth. You uncover your bowl, he jumps on the food with both hands, fills his mouth, faster than before because he is now stronger, pushes unbroken chunks of food down his throat forcefully; he eats and eats, as you watch him with wonder, anger, fear and disgust, he eats and eats and eats and eats, until he explodes, himself becoming food for dogs and crows and unnameable insects, making you firmly believe an act of your generosity may bring a lifetime of misery to someone. He will overlook the fact that it was you who fed him a full meal a moment ago. He will overlook it even if he is eating the same food from the same bowl.'

Moina Mia glanced at me sharply. 'That is the reality here, Khaleque Biswas,' he said. 'Desperation is the rule. Desperation guides us in life. Rationale does not.'

Then, he asked, how could I explain the matter of Nur Hussain donating the Mujib coat? He could have donated as many punjabis as he wished. If he thought he had money to waste, he could have bought all the stores in the country and donated their goods to whoever he wished to. But he could not donate a Mujib coat. Giving away a Mujib coat to a destitute to sell in the market insulted the coat and the man behind it. Why hadn't I recognized, after living with him for so many months, that Nur Hussain actually hated Sheikh Mujib, he hated him badly, though he practised his speech as a means of livelihood?

I remained silent for some time. I had no answer. I was astonished to see how he knew everything. Who else was there on the road that day when Nur Hussain donated the clothes? Was it the old man who received the clothes from him, or the man who bought them from the old man, who had reported the matter to Moina Mia? Were they both undercover Awami League informants?

I remembered that the old man had sold the clothes to his very first customer. I remembered I had considered that a sign of his utter desperation to buy food. Members of his family might have been extremely hungry. At the same time, I also remembered the customer had bought the coat immediately. Why was he ready to buy the

www.pathagar.com

clothes at the price the old man had asked for? I had not seen a bargain. There was hardly a conversation. Those two people were connected to each other, I was convinced. They were connected to Moina Mia. Only Nur Hussain did not know he was entering their trap by his simple-minded act of compassion.

'What's the use of asking me these questions?' I asked him. I was getting really upset with him, not only because of what had happened with Nur Hussain, but because he seemed to have prepared himself for some time to accuse me of fraudulence. If he wanted his money back, I said as a last resort, I would give him his money back. Then we would go on our way.

He explained that the money was not the most important part of the matter. Why was I behaving like a beggar or a schoolboy, he asked, who understood neither money nor honour? If it were between us, he said, we could have come to a deal, or sorted things out in a few seconds. Unfortunately, it was not between us, and it was not about us. Though the incident we were dealing with did not involve death or bodily harm, he said, it was one of those incidents that demanded infinitesimal analysis and infallible interpretation.

'What do you think I should do?' I asked timidly.

'Something has happened,' he said. 'That something must be solved. It must be solved immediately and clinically, before it becomes the cause of much wider harm.'

www.pathagar.com

19

An Impossible Option

Sending Nur Hussain away to Gangasagar was the only option I could think of. I could take him back to Raihan Talukder and say I was sorry, I could not find employment for him in the capital. He would not be my responsibility any longer. I would come back and begin a new life. I would rent a flat in another city, or in another part of the city, find something to do, or just disappear one day, so that nobody could find me. Not even Moina Mia.

But Gangasagar was a long way from Dhaka. It would not be a pleasant journey if Nur Hussain and I were not on good terms. What would I do if he resisted getting on the bus in the crowded inter-district transport terminal and then screamed for help? Some freedom-fighter-turned-radical-nationalist might go out of control and attack both of us.

I decided to be cordial with Nur Hussain, if that was at all possible. I wanted to remove the distance between us, the distance that had grown in the last few days. I wanted to speak with him again, slowly, to make things clearer to him, to make him understand why what he was doing was taking us in the wrong direction.

He did not give me a chance. He was obsessed, terribly obsessed. He began by chanting *Joy Bangla*, quickly moved away from it, then spoke his mind. 'My eyes are open now,' he said. 'My heart is sad no more.' He was sincere. He was like the artists of the underground world who painted those graffiti on city walls. 'I have made a pledge to myself and nothing,' he said, 'not even Sheikh Mujib, has the power to shake it.'

Suddenly he was like God, so arbitrary, yet so passionate. Everything was in his power, huge or trivial. He could make the whole famine-ravaged country disappear with a small blow, and create a beautiful, balanced country in its place, putting a new army of gentle, honest,

www.pathagar.com

responsible, charismatic, intelligent and patriotic people there. He spoke, then slept for a while, and then woke up only to speak again.

No, I could not think of taking him anywhere; not even to the local streets, let alone to Gangasagar. I was not as confident as he. He was wiser than I, firmer and better. He was an idealist; pursuing noble principles suited him. His perceptions were sharper than mine, more perfect and deeper and possibly quieter and finer than mine. But this was not the time to consider who was better; it was time to understand who was more practical and better suited to survival over the others. I knew I would not be able to turn back time or heal it. Sheikh Mujib was trying and failing, despite his long and outstanding record. What I could do was pass through life without noise. For that reason I would have to take care of myself. Wasn't that why we had liberated the country—to understand our priorities and fulfil them, undisturbed, untarnished, as earnestly as possible? Let us face the truth: why should I feel guilty for being alive? Why should I sacrifice my life in order to prove that I am strong? No, I would not accept that either. Life is not supposed to make things complex. It is to unwind things, by giving simple answers to simple questions. Besides, individuals must be more cautious about their lives at moments when governments do not seem to respond sincerely to their needs. A government ought to be sincere to its people—that felt like a distant, unnatural thought to me now. It might happen elsewhere, in countries where people did not need governments, where governing was a spiritual need rather than a political imperative for leaders, but not in our land, not in a hundred years.

I guess he still had some respect left for me, for when I offered him food, he ate silently, and slept or lay down silently in his bed when I went to sleep, and did not flee to Gangasagar when the door was open.

www.pathagar.com

20

The Return of Shah Abdul Karim

The next day when I saw Shah Abdul Karim at our door, I almost cried. Although he had grown extraordinarily thin and old and did not have his bag on his shoulder, I had no problem recognizing him. His tired face broke into a smile as he embraced me.

Immediately I called Nur Hussain to come out of his room to meet our dear visitor. 'Where are you? Are you listening? See who's here,' I said. 'Isn't this day a blessing for us?'

He slowly appeared at the door, and then ran into Abdul Karim's wide embrace.

'Good God,' he uttered, painfully, in whispers, as though his heart was breaking with joy. 'God the Generous. My God.'

Shah Abdul Karim was not one to eat a lot, or to be happy to see lots of dishes on the dining table. I had observed that during his last stay. Still I cooked up a storm that evening: rice, chilli fish, chilli eggs, tomato, dal and cucumber salad—an array of food that would have been called inappropriate in those days. Nur Hussain helped me. He chopped onions, turned the eggs over in the pan, washed glasses in warm water before drying them with a kitchen towel. From time to time I looked at him, engaged him by asking if he thought the dal needed more salt, if the chillies were too hot for us. No, he said, they are perfect; and then—no, not that hot, we can digest them. He asked me if he should remove the water from the rice or was I planning to do it myself. 'Go ahead,' I answered, 'please, just be careful.'

He grabbed a chair from his room, and placed it at the kitchen door. 'This is for you,' he said to Abdul Karim, and stood holding the back of the chair until Abdul sat on it.

Asking Nur Hussain to serve dinner, I went to the toilet where I

www.pathagar.com

washed my face and hands several times. Several times I grabbed the handle of the door to come out but did not. I sat in the corner as my body shook with emotion, something I had not allowed to happen before them in the clear light of the kitchen. I opened my palms before my eyes and found them shaking. My eyes filled with tears; they became heavy and painful. I let a few drops flow down my cheek.

It had been a long time since I had felt such comfort in my heart. It had been a long time since I had cried. I saw people cry standing at burial prayers and when volunteers came with trucks to carry the bodies away. But I did not cry. My eyes were made of sand. No tears could form there. No hardship was hard enough to melt me. But now I cried shamelessly, pressing my mouth with both hands, biting my fingers and the back of my hands. Then I washed my face again and took several deep breaths before leaving the bathroom.

Abdul Karim tasted every item of food at our insistence. Every item was exceptionally delicious. The smell was hugely appetising. The colour was good. Nur Hussain ate more than he usually would. 'That is fabulous,' he said about the tomato. 'Excellent!' His hunger was awakened. He enjoyed a plate of dal and with relish raised the almost-empty plate to his lips.

As evening fell, we asked Abdul Karim the same questions again and again, as if we were afraid to be alone with ourselves, and he gave us the same answers, but every time with new enthusiasm and sadness. His stories concerned the same topics: starvation, disease, death, burial; then, again, starvation, disease, death, burial. Sometimes starvation was so vivid and penetrating that the human subjects died before moving to the next point in the cycle: disease. They went straight to the phase of death.

He told us about his travels through Narayanganj, Dhamrai, Tongi, Comilla, Chandpur and Mymensingh, where he had stayed quite a few weeks before moving back to Dhaka. A picture of any city could be a picture of all other cities; under the famine all the localities looked the same. He sang in every place, made friends, many of whom he also buried, saw many births and saw the news of the birth turn into news of grief to the parents.

Within the hour he grew sleepy. I thanked him for remembering

www.pathagar.com

us, for being our guest again. Nur Hussain made his bed on the sofa. 'Good night,' he said. 'Sleep well.'

He must stay with us, I said to myself as I went to bed. Abdul Karim must stay here at least for a few days to keep us company and give us a sense of purpose, which we appeared to have lost.

I was a much happier man at the end of the day than I had been at its beginning. The mood of the flat had changed, and it had changed forever. I was thankful for that. God bless Abdul Karim, I said; he could not have chosen a better time to come back to us.

Abdul Karim woke up with a fever. I touched his forehead. It was burning. It could be the symptom of a serious illness, I thought. Maybe he had caught something by starving day after day. He needed immediate medical attention. I knew that many diseases started off with a high temperature before escalating into something worse.

But I kept silent. I did not express my concern. I was happy when he said it was nothing, because he had seen worse, and that it would disappear after he had slept for a few more hours. 'You'll see,' he said.

That was his usual reaction, I knew. He did not believe that minor illness or diseases should overtake our mental strength; I remembered this from one of his songs. For a body to be ill, it had to have its mind ill or dead first, the song said, and once the physical illness was recognized there was no use looking for an unadulterated mind or spirituality in a person.

An illness might compel him to reconsider his decision to be on the road immediately, I thought, thus prolonging his stay with us, giving us a chance to heal. It would be good for him to stay, I said to him after breakfast. 'Most people in the city are suffering from one or more incurable illnesses,' I added, 'it won't be wise to let a simple fever become a more complicated illness by getting something else from them.' I wanted to stop him from going to a hospital. I explained why hospitals could not be called institutions for health care any more. They were ghostly places where death slept on the floor, on the surgery table, inside the coffins in dark rooms, on the veranda. Death manifested itself in the doctors' eyes. Doctors

www.pathagar.com

prescribed cholera medicines to smallpox patients, typhoid medicines to cholera patients, diabetes medicines to typhoid patients. Sometimes they gave the same round 500 mg yellow tablets to all patients suffering from cholera, smallpox, and typhoid, because that was the only medicine they had. Did he want that kind of treatment? 'The best solution,' I stated finally, 'is to stay indoors, eat well, sleep well, wipe your face with wet cloths, things that one traditionally does for fevers.'

He accepted my suggestions and stayed in bed the whole day and the whole night. Nur Hussain and I cooked barley, carried it to the sofa, fed him spoon by spoon. He moved his head a little when he did not want anything, and pointed at the toilet when he wanted to use it. We carried him on our shoulders, and stood by the door, leaving him inside, before carrying him back to the sofa after a few minutes. We washed his head three times—in the afternoon, evening, and at night—and dried his hair well so that he would not catch cold. We ate together, whispering to each other to eat more, because unfed or insufficiently fed bodies were more prone to illness, and also because we had an ill person in our flat who had walked through many diseased places and crossed many garbage-strewn streets and neighbourhoods before arriving at our door. Then we sat together by Abdul Karim's side, ready to help him immediately if he needed anything.

I could not remember when our flat had been so quiet. I could not remember when Nur Hussain had spoken his mind so clearly, if ever. He responded to every question, expressed his likes and dislikes, did not leave things for me to decide, and did not prove his existence with only a dull, hateful, unreadable and strenuous silence. I could not remember a moment when he had shown he was capable of showing such extraordinary care. I left him with Abdul Karim because he seemed to suggest he would not go to bed until I did.

By afternoon the next day, Abdul Karim felt better. His temperature fell. The dry skin of his lips became soft again, after a bath in lukewarm water. He walked little by little to the window to look outside, to the kitchen to drink water, to Nur Hussain's room to start a conversation about simple things like a button, the nail clippers, or a razor, and sat with his guitar to mend the string. He had seen

www.pathagar.com

enough, he said, enough for a lifetime; now he was tired. He wanted to return home, get prepared for something new. 'It is time,' he said.

Since he was not going to any new places, I asked him if he would consider living with us for some time before moving to his village. Even if it was for a few days, until he felt totally cured. 'Please,' I said.

Surprisingly, he agreed. 'Maybe two weeks,' he said.

Two weeks? Did he say two weeks? 'That would be so great,' I said, 'wonderful.' I embraced him and looked at Nur Hussain.

He agreed.

www.pathagar.com

21

Their Obscene Talk

We were now well into the middle of the second week of January 1975. The days were shorter, the nights longer. The sun could not be seen until 10 a.m., a dense cover of fog descended as early as 4 p.m., and then the sun set a little after 4.30 p.m.

Abdul Karim repaired his guitar but did not sing for us, not even once, in the last few days. When we requested a song, he found a way to avoid singing. He would write a good song for us later, a new song, he said, his best, and then sing it. It would take seven days to set it to music, but we wouldn't forget it in seven years. Then, his throat was not clear; he felt something in his throat even when he spoke. Singing was out of the question. Singing might cause his condition to deteriorate. A singer did not have anything if he did not have his throat under control. Then again, the guitar was not in the best of shape. It had tuning problems. It needed to have its string replaced.

Actually, it was whenever I requested him, not we. Nur Hussain never insisted that he sing for us. Did Abdul Karim not sing because only I wanted to hear him? Who could tell? We all have the most perfect reasons for not doing things on someone else's schedule.

But on the fifth day after his two-week period had begun, I knew what that perfect reason was. I knew it when I returned from the marketplace, when standing at the door I saw the two men sitting together, the old and the young, the experienced and the naive, the wanderer and the apprentice; when I heard them talking about politics at the top of their voices, about the famine, about the Awami League, the private militia, and finally about Sheikh Mujib. They were not arguing with each other, but complementing each other, filling in each other's gaps, believing each had a responsibility to make the other feel good about their irritation and frustration.

Abdul Karim had got his health back by that time. His eyes looked

www.pathagar.com

deep and alive. He called me to sit with them as he saw me at the door. 'Come, join us,' he said. 'Let us honour this beautiful afternoon with a beautiful conversation. There may be another afternoon tomorrow but we may not have the same strength of mind.'

I did not. I turned my face, and with a few swift steps, went to the kitchen, where I left the groceries on the floor and listened to them.

'How could Sheikh Mujib say only twenty-seven thousand people have died in the famine,' he said, 'when the actual number is over a million and a half, and at least three million people died in the liberation war when the actual number was less than three hundred thousand? How could he do that? Does he, then, love Bangladeshis when others come to kill them because he cannot kill them, and hate Bangladeshis when he himself is killing them because he cannot hate himself?'

'Can a person be such a beast?' asked Nur Hussain.

'That is not the question to ask. Because he can. Because he will. The question to ask is: will a person remain such a beast? And for how long?'

Nur Hussain did not need any more confusion than he was already in. What was Abdul Karim doing, rekindling his anger? Damaging him, instead of helping him?

Nur Hussain murmured something which I could not understand. There was a distance between us, and he made that distance longer by speaking confidentially to Abdul Karim, by whispering into his ears so that his words got lost before reaching me. But I was sure Abdul Karim understood him.

'You can't predict anything about a ruler,' I heard Abdul Karim say. 'You can't predict anything about a ruler when he is aware that he is the only hero a nation has. He wants your unreserved loyalty: when he promises something to you, when he breaks those promises, and even when he becomes barren and violent. He does not understand why someone will think loyalty is not cheap, that a ruler must attain it with his actions, qualities and insightfulness. Isn't he a hero, he thinks, isn't he the best? I have wasted a lot of time deciding. It is hard for a spiritualist to accept that only a private militia can protect a government which has lost its sanity. It is hard for a faithful citizen to believe that his government does not care about him. I ran from

www.pathagar.com

place to place to avoid confronting myself, asking myself a few harsh questions about Sheikh Mujib. I am ashamed of that. I now know if there is any eternal God for the universe, there is no eternal leader for a country. No more doubt; no more procrastination; I know what I am going to do, but you, Nur Hussain, my pious friend, do you know what you are going to do? Do you know how to ditch a tyrant who hangs upon his citizens' fate like an unending curse, extinguishing their hopes, destroying their aspirations, forcing them to blame themselves for his inability to rule?'

I could not restrain myself. It was just too much for me. I felt I was dealing with my nemesis, a nemesis that was blind and inconsiderate and had vowed to make me dumb, and to eliminate me at any cost. I kicked the grocery bag with all my might. A small cinnamon packet, garlic cloves, beef steaks wrapped in newspaper and green lemons fell on the aluminium saucepans with a huge noise. Then I rushed to the corner and kicked the saucepans around a few times. Abdul Karim and Nur Hussain ran to the kitchen door to watch me, Abdul Karim more surprised than Nur Hussain, Nur Hussain more frightened than Abdul Karim.

'Khaleque Biswas,' Abdul Karim said quietly, 'is everything all right with you?' When I did not reply, or look at him, he took a step inside saying, 'Is there anything I can do to help?'

That was enough to multiply my anger. 'Out,' I yelled at him as I rushed towards him. 'I don't need a friend who stabs me in the back.' He did not seem to understand why I was shouting. 'Out, right now,' I yelled again, and pushed him back, back to the sofa, handed him his guitar, pushed him repeatedly, until he was out of the door. 'Don't you ever come back,' I shouted; 'don't you ever think of returning to this neighbourhood!'

I slammed the door in his face. Nur Hussain watched me as I went to my room. I screamed several times in extreme anger and spoke whatever came to my mind. 'This is why I brought you in, you slimy pig?' I said. 'This is why I respected you? You cannot pollute what I have purified. You cannot take away what is mine. You know neither God nor men. You know nothing about politics. No government will ever surrender to the wishes of its people. No society will ever be free from the control of its government. Go rot in the camp, you old eel.

www.pathagar.com

Dig yourself a grave in the heart of the refugee camp. Take your songs with you. Don't leave them behind to misguide people.' Those screams became weaker and feebler as my fury subsided little by little. Finally, after a few destructive minutes, they were gone.

Nur Hussain passed the night without noise. He did not eat supper. He went to the kitchen quietly, as if he were afraid to fill his glass. Then whether he slept or stayed awake the whole night, I did not know. I did not hear him snore. And he did not practise the speech.

I had frightened him to the bones. He must have guessed why I was rude to Abdul Karim. Well, he should have guessed that much before, before I lost my temper.

He was leaving. Nur Hussain was leaving my flat. He was leaving behind things he had learnt, things we had promised to Moina Mia and Sheikh Mujib. He was leaving the way he came, without tension.

It would be a lonely flat again. There would be nobody to share food with, nobody to be angry with, and nobody to compromise with. There would be no sound in the other room; it would turn into a storeroom again; lifeless and dirty, a flat full of spiders, a grave, a frozen piece of memory. There would be nothing to think, plan, prepare and accomplish; no good, no bad. There would be no escape from my own futile, monotonous, agonizing presence. It would be only I, growing old, watching my legs grow thinner, my head grow bald, and my nails break every few months, winter or summer.

'Are you going to Gangasagar now?' I asked, when he came to say goodbye.

'Where else,' he said, quietly. 'That is my home. There I belong.'

'Any idea what you will be doing there?'

That was not a meaningful question to ask, and I did not have the moral right to ask him that question any more. Otherwise this moment of parting would not have come.

He remained silent. No idea—I understood.

'Would you like some company? Perhaps someone to talk to on the way?'

He stared at me.

I told him I too wanted to go there; he only had to give me an hour

www.pathagar.com

or two. I had something to take care of. Once that was done, we would be on our way.

What that something was, I did not know. I could not think of anything and said that just to buy time.

He believed me. He took a moment but he nodded, and then went back to his room. I told him to eat his meal and pack some food in a bag so that we had something to eat on the way. 'Take some beaten rice, if you like,' I said. That was the only food that was left. 'And two pieces of gur.'

Then I went out.

www.pathagar.com

22

A Punishment for Me

I was thinking too much, Moina Mia said, when I explained the situation to him. I should not think so much. It did not help.

As an example, he referred to the war of liberation. If we had thought too much in 1971, he said, we would not have gone to war in the first place. Our weakness for the territorial integrity of Pakistan would have discouraged us. Our separation from West Pakistan would only benefit India, we would have argued, because neither West Pakistan nor Bangladesh would have the ability to stand against it in a time of regional crisis. Then he spoke about the Indian Prime Minister Indira Gandhi. 'Did she fall in love with Sheikh Mujib only because he was a fiery orator, a tall and handsome man, as many people had alleged?' he asked. 'No. It was business as usual. A shrewd game of politics. Indeed, she did not fall in love with him at all; she helped him win the war by sending forces to fight against West Pakistan because by doing so she was breaking up Pakistan. That brought her more pleasure than making love with him would. Women of that stature do not know what love is. They live their lives in the constant fear of being disempowered.' If we had decided that we would not play Indira's game, he went on, the war would not have taken place. But history would not have stopped there, he argued. Even if she had offered us Indian military forces, adequately decorated with ammunitions and war strategies, we could think for a hundred years about freedom and would not yet be free if we had stopped to consider that we would be a failed state after the liberation. So, no, thinking was not the solution. That was why, though there were many thinkers in the country, there was only one Sheikh Mujib who inspired us. He took that very necessary decision at the most crucial moment. In the same way, Moina Mia said, I had to make a decision about Nur Hussain without thinking too much.

www.pathagar.com

I had already made my decision, I said at once. He did not need to terrify me. I was under pressure because something had gone wrong. But I still had enough intelligence left in me to decide the best thing for myself and the kid. I was taking him to Gangasagar, I said. Everything that had happened in the city would remain in the city. It would be lost and forgotten once he had left. Sooner or later the refugees would be gone; the Shaheed Minar area would be clean and fresh. The school building would be renovated; its field would get new grass. People would die and die and then one day they would not die any more. They would become immune to sorrows and hunger and diseases. The makeshift camps would disappear. Besides, I argued, Nur Hussain had not said anything about Sheikh Mujib for a few days now. He was willing to go back to Gangasagar, and if I did not take him now he might start speaking out again.

'What makes you so sure he would not speak about Sheikh Mujib in Gangasagar?' Moina Mia asked. 'Is there any guarantee?'

No guarantee, I said. I could relocate him to a new flat, introduce him to people he had never met, take him to the zoo to study the behaviour of animals, but I could not change the pattern of his mind. He had to change it himself. For whatever reasons, he now believed in something. He would believe in it until he believed in something else, until his memory was obliterated or lost or damaged. We would be in the city, and he in his tiny, obscure village. 'He can do whatever he likes in his village.'

He can do whatever he likes in his village, Moina Mia repeated. By saying that, he said, I had committed two mistakes. First of all, he counted on his finger, Nur Hussain could not do whatever he liked anywhere in this country, not even in the village. Villagers must do what Sheikh Mujib wanted them to do. They must follow the systems of Mujibism. Everyone in this country must follow the systems of Mujibism, if they wanted to see the country prosper.

Then, the second mistake. His finger moved again. Before explaining what that mistake was, he asked me if I thought there were any Sheikh Mujib supporters in Gangasagar.

Yes, I said; there were, many, as in every village in Bangladesh. But unlike every other village, Gangasagar showed great resistance to the Pakistan forces. If they did not love Sheikh Mujib there, there would not have been any resistance there.

www.pathagar.com

That meant every word Nur Hussain would speak against Sheikh Mujib in Gangasagar would be properly recorded, reported and analysed, he said. Then either he would be dealt with locally, if the allegations were minor, or he would be referred to the centre, to be dealt with directly by the militia. Nur Hussain was a case not to be taken lightly, given what he had said at the Shaheed Minar—his *monster* speech. The matter would quickly be investigated and the findings would lead straight to me. Moina Mia said he was making the matter easier for me to understand. In Nur Hussain's case, he said, which was now my case, there was nothing to investigate or establish; by becoming Sheikh Mujib's guests together we had already established our relationship. 'Remember?' he said. The only thing that remained would be to make a decision about how serious the punishment should be and when it would be executed.

'What's my role in this? Are you being funny?' I asked, as I felt a serious surge in my blood. He was not, I understood immediately. He looked at me frostily, his eyes like brass. If Nur Hussain were in Gangasagar and if he spoke there like he had spoken at the Shaheed Minar, nobody would know what had happened to us; we would just disappear.

But I had not advised Nur Hussain to condemn Sheikh Mujib, I said. What was Moina Mia talking about? Didn't he see how hard I worked so that Nur Hussain was ready for delivering the speech for Sheikh Mujib?

He flicked a particle of dust from his shoulder with the back of his fingers. I did not know what I was doing, he said. I did not have any idea about anything. He took a breath and then turned his face towards the window. 'Do you believe in Sheikh Mujib, Khaleque Biswas?' he asked me abruptly.

What did he mean? What was the connection between Nur Hussain's disapproval of Sheikh Mujib and my loyalty to him?

It would not have been possible for Nur Hussain to criticize Sheikh Mujib, he said, if somebody else had not criticized him first. 'Inspiration comes naturally, while condemnation needs systematic effort. Condemnation needs to be grown, tended and nurtured over time, with a purpose.' Nur Hussain had somebody with him, a collaborator, a radical and persuasive associate, a foolish mentor, a

www.pathagar.com

terrorist. Somebody ruthless and menacing must have entered his head and told him repeatedly what to think. Somebody gave him principles to argue with, strength to contradict and ability to withdraw, thus making him crippled. I was the obvious person. I must have done something to him recently that had pushed him to his present impaired mental state. I had annihilated him and then reconstructed him to suit my dismal political experience.

How would I prove that I had not done anything to make Nur Hussain turn against Sheikh Mujib? I thought I could offer to bring him to speak for himself, to admit that what he had said was completely his own invention and that I had no part in it. But I did not. That would not be enough. Moina Mia would say I had influenced him again, this time to contradict himself, and I had done that only to evade the Mujibist system of justice. By criticizing Sheikh Mujib so brutally Nur Hussain had proved that he could be influenced to commit any terrorist act, and by persuading Nur Hussain to take the responsibility upon himself I had defied the Mujibist system again. That would only double my punishment.

I was not just in an unpleasant situation now; I could feel the rage of the militia in my ears. I could already see the two militia members guarding the door giving complete attention to our conversation. They would act and act clinically when their moment came. I could see them look at me when Moina Mia said: 'Answer me this: Where is your Mujib coat, Khaleque Biswas? Why are you not wearing your coat?'

I had left it at home, I said. Nur Hussain and I were preparing for our journey to Gangasagar right this hour. The Mujib coat was not ideal travel attire. Wearing that coat on a bus crowded with sweaty bodies was also not giving it its due respect. I was aware of the respect it deserved and that was why I had come to see Moina Mia before we left. I had come out of my own sense of responsibility to request that he find a replacement for Nur Hussain so that Sheikh Mujib did not find himself in an embarrassing situation. 'I am not a cheat; even though I am not wearing my coat, I have the Awami League and its social prestige right in my heart.'

He knew all about me. He knew I had bought my first Mujib coat only after I was invited to see Sheikh Mujib at his residence; I had

www.pathagar.com

not worn a Mujib coat before the war, during the war, or after the war was won. I had not worn one even after I had bought one for Nur Hussain and had taken him from meeting to meeting to deliver Sheikh Mujib's speech.

But fighting was not his purpose, he said. There would be enough evidence against me to punish me in the most severe manner. I must come up with a more practical solution to the matter, and if I needed help, he could send a few militia members immediately. I would not need to do anything. I would not need to know anything.

'He has me,' I thought.' The Awami League has me. I am dead.

I would think about it, I said, although I remembered that he considered thinking unsuitable to progress. Then I moved towards the door.

'Sheikh Mujib has it all written out,' he said loudly, so as to make the two militia members look at me again. 'I am showing you a huge favour by being lenient towards you. If you follow me, you needn't despair.'

www.pathagar.com

23

Imprisonment Begins Here

What would I do? There must be something I could do in this situation. There must be something. But what was it that I could do?

'Shut up!' I said, when I came back home and Nur Hussain told me he was ready, the beaten rice was already in the bag, and we could start any time now. 'Shut up!' I said again. I needed time to think and plan. If only he understood what I was going through! If only he knew how I was suffering because of him!

He stood for some time with his arms folded, and then, his face suddenly growing dark, went to his room without further comment. He must have been hurt and terribly disappointed. I had shared many difficult moments with him. At no time had my words been so uncontrolled and callous. Now I lost myself. I completely lost myself.

He came back, of course, with his bag on his shoulder; what did I expect? He stopped before me for a moment, wanted to say something, perhaps a courtesy goodbye, but hesitated and did not. Couldn't he give me one minute, just one small, quiet, simple minute? He must have understood I was troubled. Within a short while I would be able to collect myself and say a proper goodbye to him, buy him a farewell gift, shake his hand, however difficult it might be, and however inconsequential it might appear to him. It was not that he had bought a non-refundable ticket and the bus would leave if he did not show up on time. There were buses departing every hour. There were newly introduced luxurious non-stop night coaches which would take him to Gangasagar early next day. Now that he would not be Sheikh Mujib any more, we might sit at a restaurant and order a traditional three-course meal: rice, fish, dal. We could go to any restaurant, sit up front, without the fear of being watched by people. He could talk about Gangasagar as much as he liked, I would not care. Then we would part, asking each other to stay in touch. That

www.pathagar.com

would be gentlemanly—a recognition of our respect for each other, and a fitting tribute to our acquaintance, Raihan Talukder. But no, he behaved as if he had become strong suddenly, the last rebel on earth, and he could neglect me in a way demeaning by any standards. Hadn't he learnt anything about politeness after staying with me all these months?

He dragged his feet towards the door, slowly. I watched him with amazement and anger and waited for him to stop. I counted: one, two, three; expected him to change his mind and sit down, saying he was teasing me, it was a joke, just a joke. Why on earth would he go back to the place that he had most willingly left behind? He did not stop. I rose and then jumped upon him with an inconceivable lunacy. I snatched his bag, threw it on the sofa, ran to the main door and closed it. 'You cannot leave,' I said; 'no way, not now, not until we are done with each other.' He knew it, but he stood still, more troubled than me, more troubled than ever, and did not find any words to dispute mine. 'I'll tell you what to do with yourself,' I said. 'I know exactly what you need to do.' I pushed him back, until he was in his room, on the bed. Then I closed the door and locked it hurriedly.

He said he felt suffocated and asked me to open the door. 'Are you listening to me?' Though he had lived in that room for months now, suddenly it had become too small for him. He could not breathe. There was not enough air there. 'What a clown!' I thought. Then he screamed my name and kicked the door.

'Khaleque Biswas,' he said. 'Look at yourself. Take a very good look at yourself. What do you see?'

He was getting desperate to get free. His kicks were getting stronger and stronger, I noticed. But the moment I feared the door would break down, he stopped kicking. A silence descended over the flat. I was exasperated, but I did not move, fearing he might start kicking again once he knew I was there, just outside the door, afraid of him. He got tired, probably, or was planning some trick. Or perhaps he did not notice how close he had come to breaking out. Whatever it was, I was ready for him. I knew exactly what I would do if he came out and attacked me. I had a steel shovel under the sofa. It had been there for a long time. A perfect tool to face an intruder; any

www.pathagar.com

intruder, known or unknown, who jumped into my world unexpectedly and shattered my peace; who damaged or intended to damage my property. Intruders are intruders—always enemies, never friends. One hit on the head would do it. I was not afraid to see blood after all the horrible deaths I had seen. Let there be blood. No madness comes to an end without some bloodshed. No stillness is ever achieved without some madness. I would ruin him before he could think of ruining me. If one hit would not do, two would. Three or four, if accurate, certainly would.

I passed two more hours sitting at the door, then slowly rose, locked the front door and went to the market. There I bought two dozen sleeping pills, a long knife and some rope; then hurried back home. On the way I did not look anyone in the face. I had no idea how my own face looked. I went in, strained to hear any sound coming from his room. He was quiet. And the door was locked, as I had left it.

I knocked on his door. I was going to remove one of the small blocks of wood in the door, I said, so that we could see each other and talk. We must make a decent effort to close a deal, and I would let him go if he cooperated, if he was not violent. I wanted to say he was sold, there was no point in resisting, there was no point in tears; he could not possibly change the history of a man selling a man to yet another man; it had always happened and it would always happen. But I did not say anything. What was the point? Did I want him to understand something? No. It was better that he understood nothing. That was why the past was better than the present, and that was why we saw a future together. If only he had remained the dolt he was when he came from Gangasagar!

I knocked a few more times; then using the knife carefully, created a small opening at chest height. He was standing against the door. He tried to snatch the knife by grabbing its sharp end, but I pulled it away quickly. His palm was cut. The blood ran. He pressed his palm with his other palm. 'God,' he said. 'God! God!'

'Hold on,' I said and ran to the kitchen and from one of the upper drawers found the Zam-Buk box. I almost opened the lock to go in to give him first aid, but stopped myself, remembering our conflict. It would be too dangerous. Suffering and compassion could not bring

www.pathagar.com

us together any more. I tossed the Zam-Buk into his room through the small window. 'Apply the balm,' I said, 'right on the cut. Apply it immediately. Then close your fist.' He collected the round white box, uncapped it and then threw it at me fast. It hit the door; green Zam-Buk splattered on the wood.

It was a relief that the cut was not deep. Once his anger abated a bit, he picked up the Zam-Buk and applied it. The blood had already thickened. The balm would take the pain away and help the cut heal quickly.

He looked hungry. I suppose he had not eaten anything even though I had advised him to do so before I went to see Moina Mia. Probably he had been so excited at the thought of going home that he had forgotten to eat. 'I am coming in,' I said. 'I am coming in with food and water.' Then I passed the rope through the window and told him to move to the end of the room where I could see his feet. He must tie his feet together with the rope and stand with his hands on the wall.

He looked at me with blazing eyes and did not move. I waited some time, trying to read his mind. I had a deep headache. I pressed my forehead with my fingers and sat on the sofa. He came to the door, looked up at me through the window, and did not say anything, good or bad. The silence became heavier. I tried to stay awake but could not.

Several hours must have passed, for when I woke up, hearing noises coming from his room, it was the dead of night.

He had broken everything in his room; the mirror, the bookshelf, the small terracotta vase. The wall clock, books, newspapers, the mosquito netting, the pillow cover, his clothes, nothing was spared.

There was blood on his chest, on his face and hands; dry blood on the floor, small splotches of blood on the wall, on scattered newspapers and on pages of books. He must have hurt himself on the shards of glass on the floor and cried in pain, but I had not heard anything. I had slept like the dead.

When he saw me, he did not speak. He got up slowly, went to the rear carrying the rope in his hand, and tied his feet with it tightly without my saying anything. Then he sat on his knees, his back

www.pathagar.com

towards me, his hands on the wall, and looked at me before turning his face to the wall again.

I opened the door, just a few inches, and pushed in a plate with some rice and dal on it, and a glass of water laced with four sleeping pills, while he remained in his position. Then I closed the door and locked it. I knocked on the door several times to let him know he could now untie himself and eat the food.

What was I doing? What was I doing so arrogantly, so wildly? I asked myself if I could reasonably explain any part of my behaviour. No answer came to mind. I could not even remember where I got the idea of buying the pills. What was I thinking when I ran to the market? Why had I run to the market?

Minutes went by. How did we reach this stage? I tried to understand it. Did I push it so far? I looked at myself in the mirror, incredulous, puzzled. I was shivering. Had Sheikh Mujib scripted this, too? What was Moina Mia doing now? Were the militia members given any specific orders?

I opened the door again—only after he had eaten, drunk the water, and fallen asleep on the floor, perhaps wondering why he was feeling so sluggish and why the cut did not hurt any more. I walked cautiously, so as not to wake him up. I tied his feet with one end of the rope and then his hands together with its other end. I had the knife on me; I would slit his throat if he woke up and got clever. With a wet towel I removed the dry blood from his face. I checked the cuts in his palm and on the soles of his feet. I applied a thin layer of Zam-Buk there. Then I cleaned the room, and removed everything with which he might hurt himself and locked the door behind me.

It was my turn now. I needed some rest. I poured four pills into a glass of water. My hands had no strength left, but I was able to mix the pills with a spoon and raise the glass to my lips. Now there was nothing else to do. He was there in his room, in the bottom layer of his quiet. I was here in my room in my own quiet. There was no one to visit us, except the militia. Abdul Ali would not come any more. The matter was way beyond his negotiating power. It had to be the militia. It would be them. They would appear with the *Joy Bangla* slogan and exterminate everything instantly.

www.pathagar.com

24

The Dream Returns

'What is this place?' I said. 'I am in my bed but I can see the sky over me; I can see the rice fields, the pumpkin bush and a kingfisher on it. There, behind the old, timid, wavy, forgotten village path, I can also see some small houses under the green trees bathing in the sweet music of the river. It seems I am in Gangasagar. Am I? What am I doing here?'

The fierce battle had just ended and Mustafa Kamal had been victorious. There were thousands of Pakistani soldiers lying all over the place, all dismembered and dead.

He smiled at me. 'Don't think so wildly, Confused One. Discovering the depths of life requires endurance and serenity. Fantasy is not all. It is only the beginning.'

I asked him why he was not coming to the point right away, why he wanted to confuse me with images that made no sense to me, if he already knew I was so confused.

'You want to sparkle all the time, don't you, Confused One?' he said. 'I am not surprised. All those that are in your situation do the same thing. They lie down on their beds, think of me while falling asleep, and when they enter a certain level of stillness, they fly to me for inspiration. I do not sparkle, but they think I do; they want to sparkle like me; they want untroubled moments, an untroubled future, an untroubled last breath, without knowing I have always considered life a trouble, war a trouble upon that, and that inspiration only makes one believe that no trouble is trouble without bound. I hate you, Confused One, I think you are a defeated man; but I'll tell you why you're here. You're here to seek my advice.'

'What nonsense are you talking about?' I asked. 'Aren't you dead? Where is your shadow? What year is this? You died in 1971, I clearly remember; you died here, on this ground; those beaming baby

www.pathagar.com

bamboos and those hyacinths grew up drawing nourishment from your blood. Don't you remember we have adorned you with a medal for bravery? He was a real man, we said; the man who loved us and the man whom we would always love. You should be satisfied with that. What more do you want?'

'I am as dead as you are,' he replied, sitting next to me, next to my pillow, placing his machine gun on the floor. 'And I am as alive as you are. But at this moment it does not matter whether I am alive or dead, Confused One. What matters is if you consider yourself alive when you are dead.'

'Don't try to play with my memory, mister. And don't you try to trick me. Once I wake up, I will shake you off from my head. You are a hero today only because you have a machine gun in your hand. Though I don't have a gun with me, I am not afraid of you. You're dead, dead, dead; I know that. I have walked in the field where I smelt your bones; your thirsty soul whispered to me so many times, said no hero wants to die; so cold, so blind, so fathomless is death.'

I held on to my bed as if I was falling; I felt like I was passing through thousands of dark bubbles. I thought, let me see what happens if I'm confused; let me be confused for a moment and see my fate; he may be correct, considering the fact that I live in Bangladesh and it was no ordinary time.

'If you're alive, as you claim you are,' I said, 'I mustn't be myself; I must be dreaming now. If I am dreaming, I might not be asking you the right question to know exactly what you are doing in my bedroom in the middle of the night. Can the confused confuse someone? Can they confuse those that confuse them? Like I confuse Sheikh Mujib, and he does not remember any more what he has recently become, a violent ruler? Can I influence him to protect a nation?'

'You're asking me how to confuse others,' he said, 'but I can see you've mastered the art of confusing yourself to the highest degree possible. You've so many questions which take you in so many directions; you want to stop somewhere, you can't; you want to focus, you can't. I will guide you so that you do not behave like the confused ones when you're confused. That is what all great confused ones in history, including myself, have done. Instead of asking me so many questions, you ask me the only question which you have come here

www.pathagar.com

to ask. I know and you know that you know only one question; you've always known only one question to which you did not have a proper answer.'

'I've no question,' I said. 'I never had a question about anyone or anything, not even about this famine. I am a happy man; I am satisfied with my meagre life; and I know the famine is not here to stay, and eternity is just too long to keep one unfortunate year in mind.'

At this moment there was thunder in the sky; somewhere a lightning bolt broke the trunk of a palm tree. He asked me if I would like him to remind me of the question, as I appeared to be out of my mind. I told him not to be so smart with me. If I knew I had only one question, as he was saying, I would not have forgotten it, would I? I said I would remember my question myself.

'You don't have to remember,' he said. 'It is so obvious. It has been the only thought you have been thinking. Your eyes, your sighs, your movements speak of that hidden question. You can't sleep. You feel insecure. You think your plans in life are going to be washed away before you know it, and the only way to stop it is to know how you might answer that question.' A man with a gun might be the dumbest of all; but I felt he had hooked me already; he was not funny and he could read me very well.

'What is it you think I am thinking?' I said. 'Let me see how accurate you are, Soldier Oracle.'

He smiled again. He took his machine gun on his shoulder and said, 'Look around yourself, what do you see? The end of an era. I ended it. I'm right here on this Gangasagar battleground today, and I'll be right until the sun has lost its light and the sky has fallen to the ground.' The killer instinct can make someone really vainglorious: he was an undeniable instance.

'Tell me, then,' I insisted, 'if you are so sure.' He laughed a little and then began to leave. 'Don't leave so selfishly,' I said. 'Don't leave me to guess how pathetic you are. You may not get another chance. I may fly to some other heroes for inspiration.' He turned back. Another thunder strike. The earth, my bed, shook a little.

'You're thinking about Nur Hussain,' he said, bringing his eyes back upon me, his stare too heavy to bear. 'Your only question is: what to do with him.'

www.pathagar.com

'Probably you're right.' I tried to smile, though my breathing was becoming shallower. He knew my thoughts; he was not dead. 'How brilliant!' I said. 'Finally I have met a clairvoyant human being. I have met someone who is aware, who thinks with style.'

'You can't admit your limitations, can you?' he said. 'Why do I even ask? You're not alone—you must have known that by this time Sheikh Mujib has joined you, the man you despise so much and yet force yourself to love. Don't worry; seventy million Bangladeshis, equally confused people like you, are with you.' He looked gloomy; even though it was the day he had attained his ultimate glory. 'I'll tell you what to do with Nur Hussain.' He turned. 'Kill him.' Then he started walking again.

'Kill him?' I shouted. 'What do you mean by "kill him"?' The wind began to blow, raising dust. A thin mist came down and gobbled him up. 'This is not fair,' I said. 'Come back; come back here right now. Where are you? You can't leave me here. You can't leave without explaining your answer.'

The mist became thick and then dark. The rice field, the trees, the houses under them were lost from my sight. The kingfisher jumped into the ground and from the heart of the hard soil caught a red fish and flew towards the village. 'Nur Hussain, Nur,' I said loudly. 'Where are you?' I raised my head looking for him. 'The whole country is full of traitors. It is a zoo; neither you nor I can live here in peace. Mustafa Kamal has lost his battle today. He has complaints instead of inspiration. He is just a vanished flame. There is no hope. Gangasagar is not an innocent place any more. Don't go there.' I left my bed, walked through the black mist, looking for him. 'Don't go, Nur. Stay with me; I'll protect you. I'm the only help you have got. I am the only one left who understands you.'

Nur Hussain had woken up before me. How long before I did not know. It could be hours or minutes. I heard coughing. Then the dull, blackened world gradually became clear. The ceiling, the picture on the wall, the door took shape. My fingers moved. I found myself back in the present.

It was the pain, I believed. A layer of Zam-Buk was not enough for him. It cooled the pain momentarily but finally proved inadequate.

www.pathagar.com

Or he wanted to scratch and found his hands tied, like his feet. Then the anger returned in full measure, squeezed his heart hard and overpowered him, and he could not sleep again. The anger lingered, making him more awake than ever. He remembered everything, everything that happened until the last moment when he fell asleep. Or it was some nightmare that visited him immediately after he was settled in the lethargic world of the pills. He woke up and believed the nightmare was real, finding himself tied up in a closed room.

I watched him through the small window. He sat against the wall, his legs extended, his hands on his lap, and his breathing shallow. He heard my footsteps and looked at me.

www.pathagar.com

25

The Girl, the Woman and the Old Man

There was a girl standing in the street, under the massive new signboard which featured a picture of Sheikh Mujib and screamed: 'MUJIBISM IS THE BEST.' She was looking at our window, looking constantly, until some noisy rickshaws distracted her for a second. She was fifteen or so and looked thoughtful and anxious. She stood there as I cooked food and did not change her position, though it was midday and the sun was extremely hot. After watching her for a few more minutes, I raised my hand and waved at her, just to be sure she was not blind. She did not respond.

I closed the main door and crossed the gravel path to have a close look at her. No, she was not from this neighbourhood. I had not seen her before. She must be from the refugee camp at the school field, one of those newcomers, a victim of the famine, coming from a village whose name I had never heard in my life.

'Are you looking for someone?' I asked.

'Someone like who?' she said, instantly irritated.

'I don't know,' I said. 'You tell me.'

'What makes you think I am looking for someone?' she answered quickly. 'Have I told you I am looking for someone?'

'No,' I said. I did not want to scare her, so I kept my voice low. 'You have not. But you seem to be lost and I am trying to help.'

'You will help me?' She smiled briefly. 'Have you helped anyone in your entire life?'

It was no use beginning an argument with her. She would not understand how the adult world worked. I did not think she had even learnt how to speak respectfully to an older person. If she were my relative, I would have never forgiven her parents for not teaching her how to maintain a minimum courtesy with a stranger.

www.pathagar.com

'Listen,' I said, suppressing my embarrassment, 'I know this neighbourhood better than anyone else around here; if you need to go somewhere I can be your best guide.'

She smiled again, but quickly returned to her attacking mood. 'Have I told you I wanted to go somewhere?' she said, and as if she was doing me a favour, added: 'Don't waste your time with me. Go on your way. I have nothing for you.' That gave me the idea that though she was young, she was not inexperienced or foolish; she knew how to hide herself behind her words.

'Why were you staring at our window?' I asked then. 'Have you seen anything strange happen there? Are you expecting anything to happen?'

'I know you,' she said, faintly. She understood she had upset me and I would not let her go without some harsh words. 'Nur Hussain has spoken to me about you a few times.'

I did not want to mention Nur Hussain's name, considering the sensitiveness of the situation, but since she had mentioned him, I asked her what he had told her about me. 'You remember any of that? One or two words, maybe—the beginning, the end, the middle, anything?'

She looked at me narrowing her eyes, as if she would never forget any part of his remarks until the last day of her life. 'You have no heart,' she uttered clearly. 'There is only ash inside you.'

'And? He did not stop there, did he?' I took a step closer to her. I waited with anger in my heart but still a vivid smile on my lips.

'Your tears are fake. Your words are lies.' She watched nervously as I began to laugh.

'Anything else?' I asked. 'Tell me even if it is trivial. Tell me even if it is ludicrous. Don't hesitate. Don't hide anything. I am enjoying this moment.'

'You do not believe what you see,' she said, with a sort of obstinacy.

'What do I not see?' I asked.

'Yourself,' she answered rapidly.

'I do not see myself?' I raised my hands before me. 'I think you are right. I see a pair of lovely feet before me. Each has twenty-five toes, some of which are rotten, and some yellow and blue. I will have to crawl instead of walking on my feet.'

She did not find my response amusing. 'You are a cheat,' she said.

www.pathagar.com

'Those that cheat suffer.' She took a step back and looked away from me. 'You will suffer for a long, long time.'

I could not understand if Nur Hussain said that or it was her own conclusion about me based on his remarks. But that was not necessary. I got my message. I was trying to understand how what he had said was in any way related to her staring at our window today. I asked her if she was looking for him, what business she had with him now, if she had any news for him. Finding her silent I changed my style.

'Little girl, speak to me,' I said. 'You are clearly uneasy, aren't you? Speak, speak.' She looked at me and again looked at the window, while her face became pale. 'What is he to you?' I asked, taking another step towards her so that she was within my grasp. 'Have you been sleeping with him?' She was not shocked as if she knew I could be a little bit dirty-minded and began to walk away as she saw a rickshaw approaching carrying two passengers. I called her from behind; she did not respond. I called her three, four times more, then I had to stop, as the rickshaw-wallah and the passengers became aware of our conflict.

I returned. From my window I saw her again after two hours, looking at our flat from the same place with the same concern in her face. This time I did not go down to speak to her. I did not need to. This was where the food was going, I thought; Nur Hussain must have found a sweetheart in her. How enigmatic he was. He had never mentioned her to me, though he had shown her where we lived and spoken to her about me.

She would have to be warned, I thought. It was not a time for romance, and definitely not a time for romance with Nur Hussain. Love is only a clever investment for survival during the famine. It will not survive. If she did not stop looking at the house, I thought, she would have to pay for it dearly. But I also thought warning her thus would make my life more difficult; people would want to know why I was complaining about her looking at my window, why I thought she deserved to be warned off. Some overcurious and stubborn ones might want to see if I was hiding something in my flat; if I had started a brothel here and she was one of the disgruntled inmates.

When evening came, she left. But she came back, early the following day, walked up and down the street, stopping for a while to look at

www.pathagar.com

the window. She looked quieter today, and broken, and smaller 'Go away from there, brainless woman,' I said quietly; 'go away, go away! Or I'll bring you here, lock you up and give you his fate!'

The sun rose higher, the street became dusty; she stopped walking and sat herself firmly on the street at yesterday's spot, bringing waves of sweat to my forehead. I thought she would stay there the whole day, and she would not leave as easily as she did yesterday; she would stay until I had unlocked Nur Hussain, taken him to the window and he had asked her to end her vigil on me. But after an hour she was gone and never came back.

In the evening an old woman took her place. She was not one of the beggar people, and absolutely not a refugee, I was sure. She had a long veil drawn down to her nose, kept her hands inside her sari. It seemed she was ashamed of what she was doing in the street. I guess she was some housewife from the neighbourhood who did not want to be recognized by pedestrians and rickshaw passengers. From time to time she raised her veil a little and had a glimpse at our window. She stayed only half an hour and then walked towards the tea stall, following an old man with whom she had a short conversation, and who watched the window for at least a minute before going on his way.

I saw the old man again, the next day, towards the evening. He took up his position at the usual place, looked up at the window once every few seconds, talked to the pedestrians and begged from them. He had a small tin can with him, on which he made a rich, penetrating noise with a stick. He made that noise looking at the window, which made some children look in the same direction. How devious he was, I thought, and how crafty. He thought if there were more than one person looking at the window, I might not accuse him of any wrongdoing. He was having a conversation with the children now. I should act quickly, I said to myself, before he had said anything insensible to them. I put on my shirt and got down to the street. He noticed me and sensed danger; he began to walk in the opposite direction, looking behind from time to time. Soon he started running, throwing the can to the side of the street, when he saw me following him. I took long steps to minimize the distance between us and believed I would be able to catch hold of him before he got lost in the crowd that was now leaving the mosque after evening prayers. But he

www.pathagar.com

ran faster, through the crowd, pushing people aside, and, probably thinking the crowd ahead was thicker, took the alley to the right heading towards the end of the neighbourhood. He had made my job easier, I thought. There were only a few houses there standing among wet, cultivable lands; he could not go far. I ran behind him now, and ran until I pushed him down on the muddy ground under a mango tree and stood over his pale face. He was breathing fast; his lips could not pronounce what he wanted to say—some protest, some explanation; anything that people say when they feel unsafe.

'I won't hurt you,' I said, 'calm down. You see, I have nothing in my hands, no knives or hammers or batons. I am not a militia. I am not interested in your money either.' I bent down on my knees, balancing on my toes, and asked him if he knew Nur Hussain, if he was waiting for him on the street. He gasped for air, but nodded. 'Good man,' I said, 'very good man; now, wouldn't you like to be a little more comfortable by sitting straight, maybe against the tree, so that you can answer me a few questions?' I offered him my hand; he shrank back against the tree, with disbelief in his eyes, his voice failing repeatedly. Extending my legs beside his, I sat in the mud. I must have been crazy to do that, but he was too important to me, anything he would say was too important and useful. I smiled at him to assure him and mildly asked who the girl was. He did not know her; he moved his head from side to side. 'The girl,' I explained, 'who stood at the same spot yesterday; she passed a long time there, waiting and looking at our window; who is she?' He repeated his answer, which irritated me, but I was still a long way from learning anything from him and I could not afford to get angry.

'Is she your granddaughter? Have you been advising her to fall for him?' He moved his head more rapidly to deny my remark. 'I know your type of people. You could even push her under a running lorry to escape the responsibility of feeding her. You disgust me. The moment I looked at you I felt that somehow I would be contaminated by your sick fantasies.' I had to finish with him as quickly as possible, so I did not press him on the same point. 'If you do not know the girl, it is all right,' I said. 'She is just a little woman with a little heart. She understands nothing. But perhaps you would like to tell me about the woman, the woman you spoke to, the woman, the veiled woman,

www.pathagar.com

who followed you yesterday; who is she and what does she want?' He did not know her either. She had asked him if ours was the house where Nur Hussain lived and he replied it was; only this; she left after he had but they had not talked about anything else. He did not know where she went or where she lived.

'You don't know anybody in the world—I accept that; but tell me, why you yourself chose the same spot?' I then asked. 'It wasn't a coincidence, was it?' If he did not want to talk about other people, I thought, he might want to talk about himself. Some people consider maintaining the privacy of others a great virtue. 'Don't you think it is impolite, terribly impolite, to stare at people's windows?' Nur Hussain had told him to wait there, he said. He had told him to look at the window when he felt hungry and could not find anything to eat; he would come down with food for him. 'That is very good; you are returning to your senses. Your life is not a total waste. Now, try to make yourself a little bit better. If you knew the house, and if you were so appallingly hungry, why didn't you come to the door instead of standing on the street for such an awfully long time, making yourself more appalling? Couldn't you come to me, ask for some food, when you saw me at the window? I'm sure you recognized me. Why did you run away?'

He tried to speak clearly this time. 'I was told not to come to the door, at any cost,' he said and observed me to see the impact of his small deplorable revelation on me. I understood what he meant. There was an earthquake inside me; an unexpected twist; the most unusual cobra raised its head with endless hissing. It took me at least half a minute to collect myself.

'Is that so?' I finally said with a smile. 'That is terrible. But I can understand; yes. I can understand that.' I took his left hand in my right hand, clasped his fingers with my fingers. 'I appreciate that you are so forthright with me. Whatever you're saying sounds reasonable. My general estimation is that you're telling me the truth. Nur Hussain could do something like that easily. There is something mysterious about him, isn't there? There are layers, one upon another, one hiding the other; there are just too many layers, I lose count of them. Never says what he knows. But you are a transparent man; you say everything you've on your mind. I believe you.' He raised his head

www.pathagar.com

and leaned heavily on the trunk of the tree, with a sense of relief. I shook his arm and then released it on his lap. 'But I wonder,' I said calmly, 'why you would tell me the truth. Doesn't it sound unreasonable to you? Because of you I now know what Nur Hussain did not want me to know. Why did you tell me what he had said to you? Why did you tell me anything?' He became still. His relaxed mood disappeared. He was so baffled by my questions that though his voice had recovered by then, he did not find anything to say.

'Were you afraid of me?' I asked him, to which he nodded lightly, but only after a few seconds. He hesitated to admit it, I thought. He considered the consequence of both admitting and not admitting his feeling. That was what I wanted. 'Be afraid, be very afraid,' I said finally. 'Do you know how many times Sheikh Mujib has sent for me to advise him about sanitation and relief management in the last few months? At least three times. And do you know how many times Moina Mia fell to my feet so that I would allow Nur Hussain to speak for him? More than you can imagine. Nur Hussain does not know these things. He does not know because I did not let him. I did not want him to be frightened of me because of my power and capacity and connections. But I will tell you what you'll do. The moment I leave you behind, you'll do me a favour. You'll forget everything he has advised you to do or not to do. I am the king here. I rule this country. I don't want to see you around here.'

I smiled one last time before walking towards the neighbouring street.

Secrets, but not secrets any more. Not to me. I laughed as I returned home and watched Nur Hussain through the small window. I laughed as I sat on my bed and as I stood at the window. 'If only I could know what other secrets he has,' I said to myself and laughed. 'He must have spoken to many more people than these three; he must have spoken about many more things than just about food. If I could know one or two more, I could understand the origin of his present disorientation and take particular steps to solve it bit by bit.' I grew tired. I needed to rest. Before that I needed to wash myself and wipe the floor behind me. With a towel in hand I entered the bathroom and suddenly burst into long, loud and painful laughter.

www.pathagar.com

26

Tears in the Eyes

A few days passed like this. I raised food to his mouth, he ate with gratitude; I raised the glass of water to his lips, he drained it completely in one go, in case I did not offer him water again. I ate whatever I made, then I slept in my room with pills, and he slept in his room, door locked. I always gave him only half the food he needed. I wanted him alive only, not strong, definitely not strong enough to overpower me; and I gave him only enough water to make sure the pills got lost without trace.

Then I noticed tears in his eyes.

They were not for food, I understood, but for the acute smell that had made not only his room but the whole flat unliveable. I felt like vomiting.

Within minutes I unlocked the door, dragged him to the toilet, holding him by the collar. There I threw buckets of water upon him. He lay on the floor, tranquil, his face quivering with every splash. I would untie his hands, I said; he must stay on the floor, his face down, and must not move until I was out of the toilet door. He would wash himself, and change his clothes, then knock on the door, so that I could tie his hands again before taking him to his room. I had the shovel in my hand, I warned him; it was sturdy, heavy, and a good size to use in the small space of the toilet. If he tried to do anything stupid or became violent towards me, I would definitely bring it down upon him and he would have to live with a far more acute smell for the rest of his life. Then I stepped on his neck and untied his hands and quickly ran out and closed the door. He lay on the floor, terrified. A moment of silence; a long moment. Then the sound of water splashing.

His hands were free now. I suspected he would untie his feet and would not come out of the toilet without a fight. Or he would

www.pathagar.com

pretend he had no plan to attack me; he would behave politely, speak softly and in a friendly manner, and do as I would expect him to do. But the moment I opened the door, he would jump upon me with all his rage. He could be ruthless, I had seen that. I had seen how he broke everything in the room, everything that he found close to his hands.

I heard his knock in due time. Two mild knocks, as I had advised. And then a pause, after which two distinct knocks again. I told him to open the door. 'Only a quarter,' I said. He opened it less than that and extended his timid and shivering hands out before my asking it. 'Give me the rope,' I said, 'give me the end of the rope.' He bent on the floor, one hand still outside the door, while with the other he threw the rope out. He had it ready before him. It was clean. No mark of blood. No smell of urine. He had washed it like he would have washed his handkerchief.

Then he extended both of his hands up to his wrists through the door. I tied them quickly. I could see the cut on his palm. I wanted to ask if it was painful any more. If the Zam-Buk was not effective, I would buy something else from the pharmacy. But I restrained myself. I did not want to begin an emotional scene before I was confident he could not harm me. I had to be safe before I helped him. I told him to move away from the door. He jumped a few steps back and stood looking at me. I pushed the door open farther and found his feet the way I had left them—tied.

I carried him on my shoulder, sat him on the sofa. There were several cuts in his feet, all open now, red and damp. Some of them had swelled up, the deep ones. Some looked black. I told him to raise his feet on the sofa so that I could examine the cuts better. He did—calmly, slowly. The skin on both sides of the cuts was whitish. That exposed the black line in the middle with a sharp contrast. I cleaned the cuts with cotton, dried them with a towel and covered them all with Zam-Buk.

Then I cleaned his room, removed the quilt, put a new one on the bed, sprayed some bleaching powder on the floor, washed it, and then burnt some incense sticks. I removed the bloodstains from the walls and wiped the walls softly with a warm and wet towel. Once the white smoke with its sweet smell filled the room, I took him to his

www.pathagar.com

bed, and placed a pillow against his back so that he could sit comfortably. His face was dry. I poured four drops of mustard oil on my palm and smeared it on his cheeks. Now he looked lively. I combed his hair, but did not bother to give him a Sheikh Mujib look. I trimmed his nails. Then I prepared a full meal for him; rice, fish curry, vegetables, dal and chilli paste with spring onion. I had my full attention on his door, which I had not locked, and which could still be a dangerous outlet for his vengeance against me. An open door might give him the sense that he was free, though he was not free. He might be lulled into thinking he could easily get out. That too would be a mistake. I had the shovel with me all the time. I had kept it next to the hot oven.

Sitting before him, I raised spoon after spoon to his mouth. He ate with great appetite. He ate quietly, his eyes down on the plate. Once or twice he raised his eyes at me for small glances. That was all. He asked me nothing. I explained nothing. Only at night, when I untied his feet, he said, 'Thank you.' I did not reply, and locked the door.

That night I had not given him sleeping pills, and I too went to sleep without them. They were no longer necessary. I felt he was coming back to me. Soon he and I would sit together, his hands free, my mind clear. We would forget the past—the past would exist only as an idea with which we had compromised. These few days of suffering, his and mine, would have washed it away. Moina Mia, the militia and Sheikh Mujib would have nothing to do with it. They would not be a part of our world. They would not dictate anything. Let Sheikh Mujib be reincarnated with all the shortcomings of failed leaders. Let Moina Mia sing of him his entire life. Let the militia rage a war against all hungry and disgruntled people because they blamed Sheikh Mujib for their misfortune, and as a result let people die in their thousands. Let the whole country turn into a shameless tent city, never to be vibrant again. Let mothers hang their children, the young starve the elderly and kill them. Let intellectuals become slaves of their own complexes, extraordinarily obscene complexes, because they love to be slaves. We would fight to live outside that insane and chaotic canvas. There must be space for us, a small place, somewhere in the living world.

He would grow into a complete man one day, a wise man, master

www.pathagar.com

of his own passions, I thought. He would use his mind creatively, and no longer need to turn to me for help. He would excel in some trade; earn his living by himself without speaking much. He was bright; he could easily acquire some technical knowledge if he wanted to. And I would have a peaceful lifetime, one devoid of dissent against people and against institutions that worked for them. I would not have to brood over my dissatisfactions with life. A Puerto Rican woman would speak in Spanish, a language I would not understand. I would find a quiet, simple, warm-hearted and trustworthy Bengali-speaking woman from one of these neighbourhoods to start a family with. I would buy her wooden earrings, oyster shell necklace, fine cotton saris with lots of embroidery and bottles of aromatic haircare oil. On a moonlit night I would take her on a boat ride on the Buriganga. When the boat would reach far, and the cacophonies of the port would fade, I would sit before her and tell her about this time. The thought of her, I would say, had saved me when I was most disoriented, and I had lived because of her. I would love her sincerely and make her the happiest woman in the world. A man like me could still do a lot of things in this country. I would create my own ideal world little by little.

www.pathagar.com

27

The Madness

Instead of sleeping on the bed, where I had left him the night before, Nur Hussain slept on the floor, right behind the door. There was fresh blood on his wrists, under the rope. He must have fought to untie himself at night. The knots were tight. The rope was hard. It had damaged his skin, and made him bleed. Now he was sleeping through his pain.

He had not gone to sleep with a delirious mind, I was sure. I had seen his face. It was calm. I did not think he hated me. There was also no sign that he had any objection to my tying him down. He knew why I had to tie him down. He knew it was not that I did not care about him. He did not need to be generous to recognize that. He could just look around the room. He could remember his beautiful meal.

So what had happened during the night? What had changed him?

His eyes were red. When he looked at me, his face spoke of horror, like the horror I had observed in him when he condemned Sheikh Mujib at the Shaheed Minar. He sat up, gathered where he was, felt the pain of the rope; and then told me to open the door. When I did not, he kicked on the door; went back a few steps to come back to kick again. 'Open it!' he cried. 'Good citizens do not stand against each other; they stand against their government. Haven't you learnt anything? Open it! Open it!'

I walked across the room, not knowing what I should do, not being able to concentrate on anything, and then looked at him through the opening. He tried to kick my face, but his foot could not reach high enough. So he came at me with his head. His forehead hit the door and bled.

If only I could give him some pills! If only I could tie his feet again! It was my luck that I had locked the door before sleeping. I was saved. With that anger, and with that brutality, he could have

www.pathagar.com

strangled me at night, or used the knife, or the shovel, or anything of the sort, to kill me. If only I could send him to sleep again!

He saw fresh blood on the floor. Then he looked at me with disbelief, and collapsed.

When he recovered consciousness, he delivered the 7 March speech, just one line from it, where Sheikh Mujib said: *You cannot suppress us!* He said it again and again; when I watched him through the window; when he lay down idly on the bed after kicking the door several times at a stretch and still failing to break out. Soon his voice became faint, his eyes became tearful, and he whispered whatever came to his mind, as if speaking from the brink of a dream.

'Land of little villages, quiet nights,' he said, 'land of green leaves sleeping upon the jute roof; land of white fish and golden evenings singing loud; land of sweet smiles, warm embraces filled with enormous blue sky, sudden laughter of pride in the rice fields on the tiny river; land of sweet sugarcane children, red pumpkin lovers, crowded lentil weddings of the night waking to the morning of beaten rice balls; land of dreams and promises and processions coated with mild wind and raindrops; land of celebration, knee-deep happiness sitting on the aisle, drinking date juice all through the winter; land of life broken into loss, pains, tears, sighs, and deceitfulness; land of little villages, empty, dark; endless lines of bodies falling deep into the heart endlessly.'

I could not resist the pull, so primitive it was, and so pure, so spontaneously beautiful. I could not carry myself away from the door, from watching him and watching him with my sincerest astonishment; from sliding myself into a jar of silence, closed and asleep like a seed.

He could do anything, anything, with me at that time, if he tried. He had changed. He had grown up. He felt the pains of the nation in his being. He had shattered all the guises a man could wear in life and emerged as a true individual with an undivided mind. He was not to be defeated.

Cold and trembling, I stood behind the door, as he continued to disappear into his voice.

And he said: 'There is no question that could not be asked in this land.'

www.pathagar.com

'Nur,' I heard myself say, 'Nur! Nur!' I bent forward and covered the whole window with my face. 'Let's go to Gangasagar. Let's start now. You show the path, I follow you. I'm sorry for all this. The speech, the dress, the deal—they were all wrong; they were all a mistake, my mistake. I owe you a great deal. You see, I grew up in extreme poverty; I had to starve as a child, as a young man. Even when I became an adult, I was earning barely enough to fulfil my needs. I would not have agreed to let you live with me unless I knew that to not do so would have been to compromise my reputation with Raihan Talukder. I wanted to save my face because only that was what I had. I couldn't even buy you a mosquito net—remember? Then the money came; it came from a place where I least expected it; and it came without effort, and also without the promise of continuity; it came with unfathomable excitement, with my first unsurpassable feeling of real success. I thought this was how I would fulfil myself; it was supposed to happen a long time ago but did not. I got carried away. But I can see it now. I was not against you; I was against myself. I am sorry. I really am. Give me a chance to make the wrong right. Let's go, you and I, to the little village of green leaves and quiet nights, where the fish jump in the air to kiss the sun. Will you promise not to attack me, not here, in the bus stop or on the way, not in Gangasagar, not ever, for this confinement, for being so rude to you? I have been rude, I know. I was not myself. Will you help me be myself again, Nur?'

He watched me intently for some time, leaned his head against the pillow and, closing his eyes, withdrew himself into his semi-dream existence.

www.pathagar.com

28

An Insult for a Thousand Years

His lips moved. 'The knot will undo itself,' he whispered from his solitude. 'The rope will disappear, the lock will melt down like a chunk of ice; everyone will be alive again––those that are dead now, those that will die in the future.' Then suddenly he became aware of his surroundings, got up from the bed and looked at me. *You cannot suppress us!* He uttered it several times, his voice growing high, and he moved towards the door.

I guess I had become too tired to listen to him, to make sense of his very presence, to correct that which would never be corrected. I felt something on my shoulders which I could neither remove nor overcome, and which pressed down upon me more than the shame of my living in acute poverty, for which, though continuously obsessed with my own powerlessness, I dared go as far as to be the creator of an unspeakable dishonour. I shed blood, found satisfaction in despicable viciousness, and played with his life most obscenely to protect my own.

I took a step back and heard him say: 'I say "No". Not in my name. Not as long as I live and walk. Not as long as I speak.' He kicked on the door a few times and looked at me through the window. I was afraid, for he looked like a ghost, ferocious and repulsive; but I remained calm; I told him it would not happen again, that I was extremely sorry for what I had done to him, it was not in my plan. 'One world ends here tonight,' I said, 'and another world begins, a very different world.'

He watched me, called me 'Sheikh Mujib'.

'Look at that little Sheikh Mujib,' he said, whisperingly. 'Victory to you little, rejuvenated Sheikh Mujib. Long live, little, rejuvenated, indomitable Sheikh Mujib. May you be happy, little, rejuvenated, indomitable, indefatigable Sheikh Mujib.'

www.pathagar.com

I begged, bringing my hands together. 'Please,' I said. 'Why are you doing this to me? Why are you doing this? Please, please. Don't make me any smaller than I have already made myself.'

He was not loud, but I felt the whole world was listening to him, and the whole world would call me Sheikh Mujib from now on. One generation would tell my story to another generation; every generation would add their disapproval and hate to it. It would go on and on and on, until all was quiet, cold and dead; until the Bengali calendar came to an end never to begin again.

But then, another day, after thousands of years, when the elements of the earth would come together again, life would grow little by little, there would be a bright rainbow over the Buriganga, blue lotuses would smile in every pond and canal, I would see strangers passing by a village road; I would see men and women returning home after a long day's hard work in the field; I would stand beside the walkway under the bamboo clump, hoping to speak to them a word of beauty, goodness and generosity; but, with my hands upon my chest, I would only pronounce: that year we had a famine here, you know; that year one and a half million of my countrymen died; but I, Khaleque Biswas, lived through it. I lived the next year, and the next, and the next. Then, before their tired but watchful eyes, I would begin to suffocate myself with both hands at my neck, though I would not be able to stop the story; I would not be able to control the words, so speedily would they come. The strangers would get closer in hesitant steps and say with wonder: but one and a half million countrymen died, and you lived! How did they die and you live? How did *you* make it happen! Were you a psychic, a magician? A prophet? They would want to know if I, little Sheikh Mujib, spoke the truth, if I really lived in 1974, for it was too long ago now, it was in the dark and frozen entrails of the past. I would say I was speaking the truth; this was the best form of all truths; truth could not look any better, not even with God. They would laugh at me through their tiredness. I could not possibly mislead them, they would say; they were tired, but they were happy; their conscience was clear, they did not bear the stains of starving their fellow citizens. I would implore them to listen to me; what they knew was not what it was, entirely what it was, I would say. There were huge floods all across the

www.pathagar.com

country, I would tell them, all crops were damaged, cattle carried away, infrastructure broken; then came severe droughts, scorching heat cracked the soil like never before, and most importantly, there were just too many desperate mouths to feed. They would not listen. They would continue walking towards their homes and families and look back at me in pity, as if they too were present in 1974 and knew exactly what happened in Bangladesh under Sheikh Mujib's rule. I would follow them a few steps while tightening my hands around my neck. I would have to suffocate myself a thousand times because once upon a time one Nur Hussain had called me Sheikh Mujib at the height of his delusion.

He had realized no other name or word could be more offensive to me than Sheikh Mujib, and I would never be able to separate my life from the lives of those that now lay lifeless, and I would never be able to wash away Sheikh Mujib's sin from my own conscience. He called me Sheikh Mujib in the voice of a boy, of a man, an old person, a hawker, a prostitute, a teacher, in every tone possible and moving his head from side to side. He called me Sheikh Mujib smiling, then pretending to sob. 'Little Sheikh Mujib, are you hurt? Shall I deliver the 7 March speech for you? *My brothers . . .*'

I could not take it any more. I picked up the shovel from the kitchen, threw away the lock from the door, and hit him hard. He took a step or two back, I took a step or two forward. He fell on his knees; I looked down at him. He crawled, said, 'You have betrayed us! You have betrayed us!' I bent over him and hit him and hit him, until his voice was heard no more, and his body moved no more on the floor.

To be specific, I hit him only in the face; to be more specific, only in the mouth. I could have hit him anywhere on his body, his arms or shoulders; his legs; or even his head, if I wanted to smash him in one strike. But I hit him repeatedly and consistently in the mouth. That was because I knew I had no anger against him, his heart, his mind or his head. It was the mouth that called me Sheikh Mujib. It was the lips, the teeth and the tongue behind the teeth that spitted out that name at me. I wanted to punish them. And I punished them as long as they moved and produced words or sounds. I stopped only when the mouth became a dark hole gaping at me, hiding all signs that it was Nur Hussain's mouth or any mouth at all.

www.pathagar.com

I laughed in extreme satisfaction and sat on his chest to make sure he did not come back to life to ridicule me. 'You understand now,' I continued to say, 'what little Sheikh Mujib is capable of? I hope you dream of Sheikh Mujib in your afterlife and are terrified.'

No moonlight was shining tonight, no spring breeze came in through the window, and I was alone in a flat that I could not stand; but I was delighted to think that I had a glimmer of hope of a normal life ahead, I would inhabit the earth for the rest of my life, beautiful and unsuspecting now that Nur Hussain was no longer there to call me Sheikh Mujib ever again.

www.pathagar.com

29

Goodbye to Moina Mia

As I walked in the street late next morning, I did not see anyone before or behind me. There was no rickshaw on the road. The yard of the mosque, which had always sheltered some refugees, was empty now. The tea stall was closed, and the newspaper hawker next to it had disappeared.

I saw some children when I reached the crossroads, but they were not playing today. Looking at their sombre faces I could imagine something fearful was happening somewhere very close. One of the children pointed at the tin gate of an abandoned house under which I could see people's feet. I would be the last person to be curious about anything today, but I walked to the gate and before I had touched its handle to open it, somebody from inside grabbed my hand and quickly pulled me in. There were a number of people there, some leaning against the wall, some sitting on the dust, some looking at the road through the small holes in the tin. One of the men, and he was none other than the imam of the neighbourhood mosque, whispered to me that a state of emergency had been declared across the nation and the parliamentary system of government had been dissolved in favour of the presidential system. He said Sheikh Mujib had declared himself *president for life* with extraordinary power; therefore the country's Constitution was no longer at work now. 'I have also heard some very disturbing news on the radio,' he said. 'Sheikh Mujib has banned all political parties in the country but one; the only party that will decide the fate of the nation is the Awami League.'

One of the men I found, sitting deep in the corner, was the keeper of the tea stall, where I had once entertained Abdul Karim. The Awami League would no longer be called the Awami League, he was explaining to another man; instead, it would be called Bangladesh Krishak Sramik Awami League from now on. 'Why?' asked one

www.pathagar.com

listener who looked like a factory worker or a rickshaw-wallah or a truck-assistant. 'Weren't Krishak (farmers) and Sramik (workers) part of the Awami League before? Then who did we support for so long?'

'Why do you ask me why?' said the keeper, irritated and angry. 'I am not Sheikh Mujib. I do not make rules.' A man who stood next to him touched his shoulder to request him to keep his voice down. The keeper nodded but when he spoke he became louder than before. 'I am a shopkeeper,' he said. 'I don't know anything. If you have guts, go to the *president* and ask him.'

I pushed the gate open and walked into the street. 'Come back,' said someone, probably the imam, but I did not care. As I walked, I heard him say with concern: 'Don't go there; they'll shoot you; come back.' I walked on. After the pharmacy building, I saw some people standing along the old brick wall. I saw the newspaperman among them. He knew me as a journalist and gestured at me to listen to him. When I went closer, he whispered that he had some bad news for me. Many newspaper offices were ransacked last night, he said, and all national dailies and periodicals were banned except four that were published under the guidance of Sheikh Mujib's intellectuals.

I started walking again. As I moved towards the main road, I saw a line of police cars there, now under the command of the militia. They were occupying the intersection to face and dismantle any anti-Awami League demonstration. All the cars were covered with numberless posters showing Sheikh Mujib's headshots.

The militia had shot six dogs in the morning and gathered their bodies on the road, a bystander told me. He was hiding behind the large garbage bin at the corner of the road, from where he observed the movement of the militia. 'There,' he said, pointing at a place twenty yards away. I saw the dogs' bodies scattered upon each other, a few other dogs attending them sitting on their butts nearby. 'Can you tell me what they want to mean?'

Another man who stood next to him hurriedly grabbed his neck to silence him. 'They want to mean this,' he said. 'Will you shut up now?'

The two men moved further into the shade to make room for me but I did not want to hide. The fact that I could now walk in the middle of the road without being bothered by rickshaws, vehicles or

www.pathagar.com

pedestrians gave me an unbound happiness. I took a long breath, stretched my neck and arms and began to walk. As I approached the intersection to see the dogs more closely, one of the militiamen came to me on his motorbike. He said he had recognized me though I could not remember having met him before. He advised me not to be on the road on such a day because someone who did not recognize me might take me for a troublemaker which he was sure I was not. He asked me where I wanted to go, if he could give me lift. I did not know where I wanted to go, so I stood before him, silent, looking past him at the dogs. He was called by a tall, middle-aged man with a finely trimmed beard, who I guessed was his commander and who ordered him to leave immediately. Holding the clutch lever to the minimum position, the militiaman said he was going to Moina Mia's and if I was also going there I could go with him. I looked back at the dogs, their mysterious silence sending a chill down my spine, but the militiaman pulled me to sit behind him.

'I did it,' I said, when I stood at Moina Mia's door. 'There is no need to send the militia. Nur Hussain is now sleeping in the depths of the earth in some unknown grave with hundreds of others who have died from the famine. I did it; I did not procrastinate.'

Startled, he took a few swift steps towards me and then watched me silently. Perhaps for a moment he thought Nur Hussain did not deserve to die for the crime he had committed, however odd and menacing the circumstances. Perhaps the massive man inside him quickly surfaced through the narrow buttonholes of his Mujib coat, and made his murky eyes glitter for a moment. It would be a moment only.

He invited me in and offered me a seat on the sofa. When I sat, he stood beside me quietly and put his hand on my shoulder.

I looked up at him. 'It is okay,' I said. 'I am not sad. Nobody could go unpunished after assaulting our Supreme Leader Bangabandhu Sheikh Mujibur Rahman.'

He was glad that I had come to him to tell him my latest news. He would find something to say to Sheikh Mujib, he said. He would not have to fabricate a story. Sheikh Mujib would understand if he said the famine had taken Nur Hussain.

www.pathagar.com

'A leader like Sheikh Mujib does not depend on one person's genius for maintaining his legacy,' he said, probably thinking I was considering myself guilty for letting him down. 'It needs a whole nation of people to create a leader like him and the same to keep him at the helm of power.'

Then he sat. His eyes became deep. He became the man I knew. He advised me not to talk about it and move on. It would remain between us. If I were asked where Nur Hussain was, I should say I did not know; he lived with me some time and then disappeared. Why he had disappeared was not a question to ask me; it was a question to ask him, Nur Hussain.

I would not talk about it, I said. What was there to talk about? One body among a million bodies would get lost as easily as a sesame seed. It would get lost without sound, without trace. Then I said goodbye. I would see him again, I said, and I would not forget his generosity; he had given me a chance to serve my country.

'Would you like to mentor another speaker?' he said, as I walked out of the door. 'One who is obedient? One who follows the rules? One who speaks only, and does not think or dream or analyse or speculate? One who does not have that troubling part called conscience in his head, a worthy and desirable citizen? One who does not transgress?'

'I will let you know if I do,' I replied and walked towards the gate. 'At this moment one seems to be enough.'

www.pathagar.com

30

Thirty-five Years of Darkness

When the last money was spent, sometime in August 1975, I left the city for a small community in suburban Dhaka where I lived among strangers. I became a salesman at a vegetable market, then took an apprenticeship as a light-duty mechanic, then became a digger for the city corporation on their dam construction project. Two consecutive seasons I worked as a mosquito sprayer. I was good at it. At the end of the second season my supervisor wanted to make me Lead Hand for the local unit. I said I did not want to be a Lead Hand; I did not want to take responsibility for others; would he please offer the position to someone else? He did not have anyone more efficient than I, he said; I must accept it. He would try to grant me more compensation for the extra responsibilities and a few days' leave after the peak season.

I disappeared the next day without sending in an explanation, and went to another community, just a few miles away, to become a schoolteacher. I taught history to schoolchildren. I was glad that the textbooks said nothing about the 1974 Famine, although they spoke about what happened after that, the killing of Sheikh Mujib in 1975. Following the syllabus, I introduced and reintroduced him as the father of our nation. I quoted from his 7 March speech while teaching the lesson covering the history of our independence. My voice did not match his voice at all, but I found the students listening to me as attentively as the refugees had listened to Nur Hussain at the Shaheed Minar. There would always be an audience for that speech, I thought; it would never cease to raise one's hair. Then I explained how unfortunate we were as a people—we had murdered our father; we had not given him even five years to organize himself, to take the necessary measures to make the country thrive. As a conclusive statement I said that although the killers had killed him like cowards

www.pathagar.com

in the dark of the night, they could not kill his spirit; it would live on to inspire us through our tumultuous journey to democracy; he would be available to us at any moment. It was history edited, a history lavishly distorted; but I enjoyed the fact that I did not have to speak about the famine, thus nothing about the inheritance of an immense dishonour. I could teach history decade after decade in Bangladesh without ever remembering Nur Hussain and my sinful past and explaining actually why Sheikh Mujib was killed so brutally.

I taught history for three seasons and then quit. How would students know about honour if they did not know that dishonour was easier and more penetrating, if they did not know people could die in their millions even if the earth did not move? These students would be judges, lawyers, executives, soldiers, and of course, leaders; they would be in charge of our nation and guide it through time. It was important that they knew the problems of our past so that they learnt exactly how to avoid them in the future.

I entered more humble professions in the days to come: cobbler, bricklayer, poultry worker, for some time a boatman on the Dhaka–Keranigonj route. Every so often I did not know what my job would be for the day. I stood in line with day labourers waiting to be hired. I did all sorts of work—cleaning backyards, removing fallen trees, cutting harvests, drying jute fibre on the highway, dyeing winter cloaks, rescuing drowning people from the river. Even these appeared satisfactory after a while; they gave me ample time to contemplate my life. I had my evenings free; I had the respect of my fellow workers. They invited me for tea, brought sweets for me on religious occasions. The poultry owner gave me a dozen eggs every month; his mother repaired the sleeves of my shirt.

That was not what I wanted. With time passing very slowly, I wanted to be hated and tortured; I wanted something punishing; something that would resurrect me from my own dead existence. I had sold my heart to the killer that I was. I had sinned. In everything I saw and heard, I wanted to feel the pain that I had caused Nur Hussain at the very last moment of his life.

While working as a rescue worker, I saw a small vacancy notice for the Anjuman in a local newspaper. They were looking for a gravedigger. Gravedigger? That job was mine, I thought. It was mine, and it

www.pathagar.com

would be mine until someone had to dig my own grave. Nobody remembers a gravedigger, neither the living nor the dead; nobody wanted a relationship with a gravedigger. I thought it would be appropriate work for me, an appropriate punishment. Every corpse would remind me of Nur Hussain, and every evening I would cry for him sitting in my lonely room.

I ran to the Anjuman office, told the recruiting manager I was interested in the position and that I was strong and had strong nerves. I was a survivor, I told him; I had seen many deaths from up close; I would not become emotionally involved while interring a body. I was not allergic to bad smells either, I added, and he could pay me a reasonable salary for my service. The manager asked if I had used a shovel before. I had; spade, hoe, plough, everything; particularly a shovel. I was born in a village and I had lived there until I was sixteen, when I moved to the city. Then for a long time I did small jobs that involved lots of hard labour. I specifically mentioned the digging job that I had done for the city corporation. He watched me keenly, as if he had never seen anyone with so much enthusiasm for such a job. Then he asked if I knew how deep, wide and long a grave was, and how much it could be raised above the ground. I had done my homework; five feet, four feet, six feet, and one foot, respectively, I answered at once. He gave me a form to fill out.

Seasons changed, children who survived the famine grew up and begot children. Several rivers ran dry; devastating floods and tsunamis killed thousands of people. A few thousand more were shot dead, hanged or kidnapped and tortured by dictators and elected governments, including the Awami League. The population of the country doubled; more mass graves of the nationalists who had sacrificed their lives in the liberation war were discovered; half a dozen memorials were erected in their honour. Surprisingly, the country's archaeologists did not find the graves or remains of those that had died during the famine; therefore no memorials were erected for them. Governments and political parties opposed to the Awami League did not talk about them because they themselves were ruthless like the Awami League; they too had lots to hide and distort; they too needed protection against the truth. I myself had grown old, old and irrelevant, because of my self-contradictions, because of my

www.pathagar.com

memory, which clearly contained the face of one Nur Hussain, who cursed and loved me simultaneously.

When I was alone, alone before a green, open field, I saw him sitting on his bed, his face between his hands, squeezed and dark with some pain he could not digest or ignore or explain. Then I saw him speaking, standing at the Shaheed Minar, speaking to bring all Bangladeshis together under one roof. I heard his voice—in all its defectiveness and perfection. I heard him memorizing the 7 March speech phrase by phrase, sentence by sentence, trying to pronounce every word correctly, giving them the typical Mujibist phonetic character. And I saw myself standing beside him, coaching him through the whole process of learning the speech, wearing the Mujib coat, and disciplining him so he did not speak too much. I saw everything that happened afterwards, how one day things changed and I cut short his life with my ill-gotten decision. Sometimes the images came with all the details; sometimes they were just outlines, one or two disconnected moments from the past. They came and went away and came back again; they sat on my chest and tortured me constantly.

I lived in many places; so did not buy very many things. I shed my needs gradually and came to be satisfied with a bare flat, with a mat, a quilt, a pillow, a saucepan, a stove, a plate, a mug in the toilet, two plastic containers for dal and salt, and two sets of clothes. And when I moved to a new place, I left everything behind to erase my past. I did not keep any copies of the *Freedom Fighter* or any newspaper published during the famine. They were not necessary. I had them in my head. I could easily remember how dark the water had been that the refugees drank to catch cholera. I could give a proper description of the night when Basu and Gesu were shot and Ruhul Amin entered a temporary phase of self-evaluation and decided that he was right to pull the trigger.

Though the Anjuman buried around seventy unclaimed bodies every month, more during general strikes, elections and religious festivals, and I dug almost half of the graves, soon I understood it was not enough for me. Gravedigging had its piety, but it could not salvage me. No act of generosity or kindness or punishment was adequate to make the wrong right. I could dig a thousand graves and

www.pathagar.com

cry a thousand nights, but it would not match what I had done. I would still be avoiding the truth that I wanted to see reflected in our national consciousness—guilt for the dead. It was only by admitting to the world that I had killed Nur Hussain could I finally deal with the matter, if dealing with it was at all possible.

~

www.pathagar.com

Epilogue

The sun is setting. I can see the last glow of the day on the sprawling coconut leaves in the school field. The wind is slow. The dust is returning to the earth.

This is my last evening under the open sky. If I come here again, and stroll in these streets, and view these landscapes, it will be in my imagination, through the tunes, images and colours that I have gathered in my memory.

And I have gathered enough of them.

The cement floor of the Shaheed Minar is very inviting for a short and undisturbed break, before I finally withdraw myself from the world. With my cheek on the floor, I can hear footsteps, the noise of rickshaws running frantically—they are now returning home carrying weary party workers. I guess Sheikh Mujib's birthday party is now over. His ghost will retire at least for a night.

When I was a small boy, they said the more I ran, the quicker I would grow up. I ran mile after mile in rice fields, wheat fields, jute fields; I stumbled on hard mounds of earth, and jumped into ditches and canals before learning how to swim. I think I grew tall before my time. After my confrontation with Nur Hussain, I ran again. I crossed a vast distance, but this time to become small, to detach myself from everything that I knew and wanted to be, and to become extinct. I wish I had never learnt to run in the first place. Growing up is a curse, if one failed to grow a sense of responsibility as well.

I can see a line of birds flying south. So many days I have watched them until they became small, indistinct and finally disappeared in the flares of the horizon. Today, my sight is blurry; I cannot see far. But I can still imagine the shock that will surface in people's eyes when they find out who I really was. My colleagues in the city's excavation team, when they read my story in local newspapers, will be able to decipher the riddle of my sudden disappearance. They will say that they knew from the beginning that there was something

www.pathagar.com

unpredictable about me. Gatekeeper Ruhul Amin, if he is still alive somewhere under the sun, will read my story only to condemn himself for showing me respect when I went to see Moina Mia. I was a cold-blooded killer, he will say, indeed, so cold-blooded that even a killer like him could not stand a person like me.

From these stairs, I can see the floodlights of the Sheikh Mujib police station on Sheikh Mujib Drive; I can see several security vehicles sprinting down Sheikh Mujib Street, blowing emergency horns. Have they arrested one or two protesters at the square, who joined Sheikh Mujib's birthday ceremony peacefully, but then, when the first opportunity came, displayed placards portraying him as a man wearing human skulls around his neck, and said he was our founding father but also our deadliest dictator? It would not be a surprise. It would not be a surprise, either, if all Sheikh Mujib followers in the country came out on to the street and, with their most hateful voices, demanded death sentences for the protesters.

I guess they will do the same in my case. After my confession, they will instigate a whole country of people against me and together condemn me for good. Why make such a fuss after so many years, they will wonder; why bring the dead back to life? Is it because a sinner will always refuse to drown until other sinners have gathered themselves under his arms? I am not afraid of them. There is no room for fear in my heart. At this moment, I can accept only pain and remorse and despair. I must remember my cruelty as long as possible and as honestly as possible. I must relive it every day as a process of atonement, until I am done. So leaving all details behind, and all debates, I say to myself: the story is long but it is simple; I have carried an excruciating guilt on my shoulders; it was pulling me to the ground every moment of my life. I have not admitted this guilt for a long time, have fought against it bullishly, and have also won for a long time. I do not want to win any more, especially by defeating part of myself again and again. Sheikh Mujib and the Awami League may not recognize the deaths they caused by allowing the famine to grow deeper with their maladministration, but I will recognize the death that I have caused with my misjudgement. Then I will be free.

My heart beats, fast and faster, and then becomes normal again, when I stand before the station gate, and when I feel I am there,

www.pathagar.com

finally there, very close to the moment when I won't need to be anxiously thinking about my salvation any more. I do not have any weight now but the weight of tears rolling up my throat, looking for a way to come out. My life has been a waste. By destroying Nur Hussain, I have only destroyed myself.

'Good luck, my country,' I whisper, as I proceed through the gate. 'Good luck, and goodbye, my misery; a very happy goodbye.'

www.pathagar.com

www.pathagar.com

It is the 1970s. After a bloody struggle, Bangladesh is an independent nation. But thousands are pouring into Dhaka from all over the country, looking for food and shelter. Amongst them is Nur Hussain, an uneducated young man from a remote village, who is only good at mimicking a famous speech of the prime minister's. He turns up at journalist Khaleque Biswas's doorstep, seeking employment. He is initially a burden for Khaleque, but then Khaleque, who has recently lost his job, has the idea of turning Nur into a fake Sheikh Mujib. With the blessings of the political establishment, he starts cashing in on the nationalist fervour of the city's poorest. But even as the money rolls in, the tension between the two men increases and reaches a violent climax when Nur refuses to stick to the script.

Intense yet chilling, this brilliant first novel is a meditation on power, greed and the human cost of politics.

www.pathagar.com

NEAMAT IMAM is a Bangladeshi-Canadian writer living in Edmonton. He holds a PhD in theatre studies and has taught English at two universities in Bangladesh. He has authored a play, a collection of poetry and two novellas in Bengali. *The Black Coat* is his first novel.

Author photo by He Wen Shu
Cover design by Fallow Agarwala

read more

ISBN 978-0-670-08665-8

Fiction

9 780670 086658

₹499

www.penguinbooksindia.com
For sale in the Indian Subcontinent only

www.pathagar.com

'He had an extraordinary power—
I felt it under my skin. Though he
spoke only a few sentences, it seemed
he was able to rouse his audience
exactly as Sheikh Mujib had done.
He ended with *Joy Bangla* and the
crowd shouted back *Joy Bangla*.'